

THE
REVERIE;
OR, A
FLIGHT
TO THE
PARADISE of FOOLS.

All Things vain, or all who in vain Things
Build their fond Hopes of Glory, or lasting Fame,
Or Happiness in this or th' other Life.

MILTON.

Thos. Barker

BY THE
EDITOR of the ADVENTURES of a GUINEA.

In TWO VOLUMES.

The THIRD EDITION.

D U B L I N :

Printed by DILLON CHAMBERLAINE, at Faulkner's-
Head, No. 5, College-green.

M DCC LXXVI.

As the following Epistle contains some Account of this Work, it was judged not improper to insert it here.

From the DUBLIN JOURNAL of December 14th, 1762.

Extract of a private Letter from London, December 7.

“ **T**HE Attention of the Public is now
 “ entirely taken up with the present
 “ Peace, and various are the Opinions about
 “ it. Our Mystery-mongers seem highly
 “ pleased with some Anecdotes on the Sub-
 “ ject, which they pretend to have discover-
 “ ed in a New Work published here, by the
 “ Editor of Chrysal, (now sought after with
 “ Avidity) entitled, *The Reverie*; which,
 “ I am certain, if printed on your Side the
 “ Water, cannot fail of being universally
 “ well received, many of the most interest-
 “ ing Scenes being laid there, and the Cha-
 “ racters so strongly marked, that little Sa-
 “ gacity will be required to discover the
 “ Actors of them, by any Person who has
 “ the least Intercourse with the World, es-
 “ pecially as they are Personages eminent
 “ in their different Spheres of Life. — Into
 “ whatever Region the Reader is transport-
 “ ed by this ingenious Author after his Sub-
 “ jects, he is sure to charm, so picturesque
 “ are

“ are his Descriptions; his Satire is strong
 “ and pointed, and his Knowledge of the
 “ human Heart most extensive: In short,
 “ I can with Confidence assure you, that,
 “ on Perusal, you will find this Work both
 “ spirited, sensible, ingenious and entertain-
 “ ing, as well as abounding with Variety,
 “ and the Production of the Author of Chry-
 “ sal, a Work which hath been justly ho-
 “ noured with universal Approbation.”

C O N-

IN
of
se

Fruit
is

The
fr

Love
tri

A ve
of
is

'Squin
ley



CONTENTS.

BOOK the FIRST.

CHAP. I.

INTRODUCTION. A sudden excursion of an extraordinary nature opens an uncommon view of common scenes. Page 1

CHAP. II.

Fruitless reflections. The history of Mr. SUGARCANE is introduced by that of his illustrious father. P. 5

CHAP. III.

The hero of the tale makes his appearance. The happy fruits of good education. p. 10

CHAP. IV.

Love triumphant over nature, but foiled by art. Theatrical morality. p. 11

CHAP. V.

A well-laid scheme disappointed. The great advantage of being well read in the drama. The scene of action is changed. p. 15

CHAP. VI.

Squire SUGARCANE arrives in England. An odd medley of high and low life. Prejudice of education involves
A 2

volves him in many disagreeable circumstances, and at length brings him into imminent danger. P. 17

C H A P. VII.

An hair-breadth escape. The happiness of being absolutely disengaged in life. An unexpected piece of news shews the perverseness of the human heart. P. 20

C H A P. VIII.

The pleasures of theatrical society. The squire commences critic and patron. He acts the part of Ixion, and embraces a cloud instead of a goddess. P. 24

C H A P. IX.

Mr. SUGARCANE commences statesman. Signal instances of ministerial confidence and favour. A common change. The conduct of a patriot. P. 29

C H A P. X.

The history of a cobbler, who would correct the times. The best way to win the hearts of the mob. He overacts his part and is turned out as a wrangler. P. 34

C H A P. XI.

He rises in life, but cannot leave off his old tricks. A repulse overturns his patriotism, which is again renewed by another. The great advantage of a certain quality; generally decried, but as generally practised. P. 37

C H A P. XII.

Luck is all. He returns home, and triumphs over his enemies. Great discoveries in philosophy. His story concluded, and himself left in a fog. P. 41

C H A P.

C O N T E N T S.

111

C H A P. XIII.

An odd way of expressing favour or dislike. The history of THE COBLER matched by that of a CRIER. p. 45

C H A P. XIV.

Set one knave to catch another. An instance of moderation as much out of course as in character. The parson swallows a sugar-plumb, and does what he is bid like a good child. p. 49

C H A P. XV.

A game of foot-ball. A false step gives the crier the better of the match. He kicks the ball in his master's face, but makes all up, and comes off with flying colours. p. 52

C H A P. XVI.

Muzzle a bear, or he'll bite you. Three remarkable characters. Boys that play tricks should beware of tell-tales. p. 57

C H A P. XVII.

A bad excuse is better than none. The advantages of a friend in court. A maxim in law solves all. p. 61

C H A P. XVIII.

Modern modesty and gratitude. Comparisons are odious. A good memory often makes a bad companion. It is prudent to make hay while the sun shines. p. 64

C H A P. XIX.

Signal instances of greatness of spirit. Consistency of character maintained. A scene of uncommon tenderness. p. 68

C H A P.

C H A P. XX.

The opening of a new scene gives occasion for some reflections which will probably be least agreeable to those who have most occasion for them.

p. 72

C H A P. XXI.

A life concluded in character. An uncommon legacy of love and gratitude. A particular circumstance, necessary to be attended to through the course of this curious work, is explained.

p. 76

C H A P. XXII.

An account of an universal genius. Some curious secrets in the trade of an author; with a new way of replying to impertinent remarks.

p. 81

C H A P. XXIII.

Extraordinary instances of one author's regard for the reputation of another, with a short method of silencing competitors for literary fame.

p. 88

C H A P. XXIV.

A rare example of modesty and respect on a most trying occasion. A sure way of getting a good character; with some short reflections on literary ambition, and other more serious matters.

p. 92

C H A P. XXV.

The pleasures of being a great man. Mysteries in politics. One drawn battle leaves room for another. Children and fools fall out at play.

p. 96

C H A P. XXVI.

A good way to make up for a bad market. Mysteries of state-preferment. Servants must not advise their masters.

ters.

C O N T E N T S.

v

ters. The comfortable effects of modern honour. An heavy cloud gathering.

p. 100

C H A P. XXVII.

A strange apparition disperses the cloud. A new method of making a good steward. The perilous adventures of the knights of the halter, with other savory matters.

p. 105

C H A P. XXVIII.

An appearance of danger the most convincing argument. A strange character of a strange sort of people. The best foundation for popularity. The mystery of patriotism, with some low prejudices of education.

p. 110

C H A P. XXIX.

A famous war-scene. The modern art of generalship. A new method of reformation, with the lamentable history of a penitential procession.

"He that's convinc'd against his will

"Is of his own opinion still." —

p. 116

BOOK the SECOND.

C H A P. I.

The happiness of having more money than a man knows what to do with. The extensive knowledge of the lovers of VIRTU, accounted for. Poets not judges of painting.

C H A P. II.

Success no proof of merit. The impropriety of being pleased against rule. A curious account of the great advantages of the ancient drama. Painters not judges of poetry. — A capital defect in the designs of two famous

mous

mous architects, with the wonderful effect of a bow window.

P. 130

CH A P. III.

No bag without a bottom. The advantage of keeping a good resolution. An evening spent in taste, and a jaunt to BATH. The misfortune of wanting something to wish for ; with some uncommon reflections in praise of what no one desires to possess.

P. 135

CH A P. IV.

History of Mr. CHAMÆLION. The pleasure and advantages of the friendship of the Great. Episode of Monsieur FRIPPEU and his lady opens some secrets not very pleasing to the hero of the tale.

P. 138

CH A P. V.

Misfortunes multiply. A new method of engaging the assistance of the great. Common occurrences. CHAMÆLION breaks with his great friends rather unpolitely. His history concluded with some odd reflections.

P. 144

CH A P. VI.

A rare character. Description of a lady's closet. Pleasing meditations ; with one side of a remarkable conversation. The history of Cælia and Strephon. Masqued batteries most dangerous in love as well as war.

P. 149

CH A P. VII.

The history of Cælia and Strephon continued. — An extraordinary method of holding conversation at a distance. People often pay for peeping. Love is a riddle.

P. 155

CH A P. VIII.

Continued. — Perplexity worse perplexed. A slight prejudice of education opens a new scene of confusion. A

curious

CONTENTS.

VII

curious account of a JUGGLER. He fails the Devil at his own weapons; but is surprized himself in the midst of his triumph. p. 159

CHAP. IX.

The history of Cælia and Strephon concluded. The Juggler juggled, and the mystery cleared up at last. Habit too powerful for conviction. The advantage of making the first story good. p. 164

CHAP. X.

Different appearances of the same object seen in different lights. A whimsical representation of the last efforts of gallantry, with other no less curious matters. p. 170

CHAP. XI.

Anecdotes of a celebrated female. A fencer foiled at his own weapons. Secret of a correspondence not so uncommon as unaccountable; with a striking instance of vicious vanity. A new scene. p. 173

CHAP. XII.

Account of a remarkable person. Common consequences of a common connection. The scene changed. A good partner often helps out a bad game. p. 177

CHAP. XIII.

Looking back often dangerous. Female artifice triumphant over reason and virtue. The natural consequences of this. A remarkable instance of the effect of complying with the fashion. p. 182

CHAP. XIV.

Worse luck, and more of it. A new method of breaking a bad habit. Travellers often return without their errand. p. 186

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Anecdotes of a professed wit. A lucky hit made the most of. Too much of one thing won't do. A rough retort of a coarse jest; with other curious matters of the same kind.

p. 190

CHAP. XVI.

Instances of the compassion common on such occasions. The practical joker enjoys a double triumph over the wit. Other worse consequences of the prostitution of genius.

p. 196

CHAP. XVII.

An old observation confirmed by a new character. A remarkable instance of the inconsistency of the human heart. A curious love scene proves that the pleasure of variety is sometimes attended with danger and inconvenience.

p. 201

CHAP. XVIII.

A new motive for turning soldier; with a short view of the military profession. The scene is changed, and a more extensive prospect opened.

p. 206

ADVER-



ADVERTISEMENT.

IN the following work the judicious reader will directly trace the hand of the author of *CHRYSA*L. The uncommon approbation with which that performance has been received by the Public, determined the editor to spare no pains nor expence, to recover the other remains of so successful a writer. The difficulties attending such an attempt are obvious. From the supposed *Clergyman* * alone, into whose hands they first fell, could any account of them be expected: but how to trace him through all the various characters, which such persons usually assume, was the question. At length, after a most fatiguing search, he was indebted to accident for that success which all his diligence had failed of. He was called upon one evening by an acquaintance, to go with him to Bridewell, in search of a servant girl of his, whom the laudable vigilance of the constables had taken up in the street the night before, when she was sent on an errand, and the strict justice of the magistrate had committed to the house of *correction*, as she unluckily had not a penny in her pocket to prove her innocence, or even pay a messenger for going for her master. While they waited in the public room for the return of a person who was sent for her discharge, they were struck with the uncommonly droll look and behaviour of the waiter who served the company with liquor. To divert the melancholy reflections, therefore, with which such a scene of wretchedness and debauchery must affect every humane heart, they called for a pint of wine, and desired him to sit down and drink with them. The invitation

* See the preface to *CHRYSA*L, p. 20.

vation was readily accepted; and the fellow observing that they expressed some curiosity to know how a man of his apparent abilities could have sunk into so low a station, immediately gave them the following outlines of his history.

“ Gentlemen, (said he) there is nothing in this life
 “ but *ups* and *downs*. Low as you see me at present, I
 “ have often figured in an higher sphere. I have been
 “ a player, a doctor, an author, and a parson; and
 “ have acted my part with a proper dignity in each
 “ character till the farce was ended. I have also, indeed,
 “ amused myself with taking a view of life in
 “ less exalted stations: I have been a broken soldier,
 “ a ship wrecked sailor, a fool, a madman, and a gyp-
 “ sie; in reward for some feats of uncommon clever-
 “ ness in the last of which characters, I have had
 “ lodgings assigned me here, rent free, for seven years,
 “ where, that I should not be idle, I have descended
 “ to the occupation in which you see me. However,
 “ I am not dispirited. Seven years will not last for
 “ ever; and I hope to be prime minister yet, before I
 “ die.”—

The moment he mentioned his having been a parson, it occurred to the editor, that this might possibly be the one whom he had been so long in search of. As soon as he stopped therefore to drink their healths,
 “ It must be allowed (said he) that you have seen life
 “ in various lights; but there is one circumstance in
 “ your history which I do not understand. You say
 “ you have been a parson —” “ Aye, sir, (answered the
 “ other) one of *your self ordained* ones, who go about
 “ the world preaching poor people out of their senses,
 “ and then picking their pockets. But my conscience
 “ was too tender for such a vile trade, so I left it and
 “ turned gypsie; though I have had reason enough since
 “ to repent of the manner in which I took that step, as
 “ I lost an opportunity of making my fortune by it.
 “ You must have heard of the book that has made
 “ such a noise lately, *The adventures of a Guinea*. Sir,
 “ that book was once mine; but I had not the good
 “ fortune to make a proper use of it. I must needs
 “ attempt

“ attempt altering, forsooth ; and before I had finished, some impertinent suspicions of my neighbours obliged me to shift my quarters somewhat suddenly ; and in my hurry I forgot to put up that book along with the rest of my papers.”—

The editor had some difficulty to conceal the pleasure which this account gave him, though he was sensible that the utmost address was necessary, if he hoped to succeed with such a voluble genius. “ And pray, sir, (said he therefore, with a careless air) were you the author of that book ?”—“ No, sir, (answered the other) I was not the author of it, but it was mine notwithstanding. That, and some other papers, of infinitely greater value, were given to me by the woman in whose hands the author left them. If you have read the preface to that book, you must remember she says, that her old lodger was succeeded by a *Clergyman*, who left her house to go preaching about the country. I was that *Clergyman*, sir. But it is not the loss of that book which I lament. Well as it has succeeded, it was not to be compared with another of the same author’s, which I made a shift to carry off, and which would certainly have made my fortune, had I not lost it in much the same manner as I did the other. But it is in vain to grieve at what cannot be remedied ; and so, gentlemen, my service to you.

“ You must know, gentlemen, (continued he, as soon as he had drank off his wine, which now began to warm his heart, and set all his secrets a-broach) that in the course of my *ministry* I insinuated myself so far into the good opinion of the wealthy widow of a country farmer, that she took me into her house, to instruct her children in the true reformed principles of religion, having fallen out with her vicar about his dues. If I could have contained myself, I might have lived happily enough with her ; but the flesh was frail ; I was then a young fellow, and her daughters were good clever wenches. In short, I taught the two eldest of them other lessons beside religion. Such matters cannot be long concealed. My kind pupils soon began to feel sympathy
“ toms

"toms that shewed me it was time to decamp; which
 "I did accordingly, without taking any leave, to
 "avoid the pain of parting: but as I was not so well
 "provided for my journey as I could have wished, I
 "made bold to break open a chest in which the old
 "woman kept her most valuable things, and took as
 "many of them as I could conveniently carry off.
 "This obliged me to leave my own baggage behind
 "me, which, to say the truth, was of no great value,
 "except those papers; and the worth of them I was
 "also ignorant of at that time; though I am sensible
 "now, that it greatly exceeded that of my booty,
 "which consisted only of an old silver tankard and
 "cawdle-cup, and a parcel of linen; for the beldame
 "kept her cash somewhere else." —

This account was far from giving the editor satisfaction, as he apprehended that it would be very difficult to prevail on him to make a discovery that might endanger his life, by telling where he had performed those exploits. However he resolved to make the attempt, and, taking him into another room, told him, if he would let him know where those papers were left, he would give him the most sacred assurance that no ill consequence should attend his confidence, and that he would honestly pay him the value of them, if he should be so fortunate as to recover them. The other turning his head on one side, and fixing his eyes intently on him, with a look of inexpressible archness, for some time, "Why, (said he) there is something odd
 "enough, to be sure, in asking such a question; but
 "as you appear to be more of a gentleman, than to
 "trepan such a poor devil as me to the gallows, I
 "will e'en tell you. As to paying me, I shall leave
 "that to yourself, when you get them; and shall
 "only desire a guinea at present, to buy me some little necessaries, as you see I am rather out of repair." —

This demand was immediately complied with; on which he named a place above two hundred miles from London. However, without hesitating on the danger of being deceived, he set out directly, and found,

ADVERTISEMENT.

v

found, to his unspeakable joy, that once in his life the other had acted honestly. As soon as he had made some necessary enquiries, he went to the old gentle woman, who was still living, and after a little introductory discourse told her, that he had come, in obedience to the dying request of an unhappy person, to make her the only reparation in his power for the injuries he had done her, by paying for the things he had taken away.

At the mention of his name she burst into a flood of tears; after the first violence of which was over, she consented to accept of the satisfaction he offered, and finding he was no stranger to his *friend's* other feats in her family, told him that matters had not proved quite so bad as might have been apprehended, her eldest daughter having miscarried privately, on his going away; so that she suffered no injury in her character, and was since well married to a man-midwife in the next village; as her second was to the squire's only son, who, for reasons best known to themselves, made no objection to her for being with child. — Pleased with this account, he paid her what she demanded for her things; and then carelessly enquiring whether his *friend* had not left some books and papers there, had the pleasure to receive them all, tied up as they had been left; the good woman declaring she had all along been convinced that a man who knew so much of religion as his *friend* the *parson*, would certainly pay her some time or other; and therefore she had taken the greatest care of them.

Flushed with this success, he returned to London, and going to Bridewell to communicate the good news to his new *friend*, he found that the guinea he had given him had put an end to his adventures the very night he got it, one of his fellow prisoners and he having, for a trial of their heads, drank such a quantity of gin as killed them on the spot. This event gave him an absolute property in his acquisition, which he now offers to the public, with the same scrupulous fidelity he observed in relation to the former works of this author; and he hopes this honest account, added to what he said

said in the preface to that applauded performance, and the arguments urged in the advertisement prefixed to the second edition of it, will obviate any suspicion of its aiming at particular characters, or being other than a meer work of imagination.

POSTSCRIPT.

IT may not, for obvious reasons, be improper to inform the Public, that this concludes the works of our author of this or any other entertaining kind; the rest of his writings relating solely to his attempts to find the Philosophers Stone.



THE

Intro

came
to th
cred
the i
funk
RE
ing
over
conv



THE
R E V E R I E :

O R, A

Flight to the Paradise of Fools.

C H A P. I.

Introduction. A sudden excursion of an extraordinary nature opens an uncommon view of common scenes.



S I indulged myself one evening in the pleasure of reading the divine poem of PARADISE LOST, which I do as often as health and serenity of mind make me capable of enjoying so sublime an entertainment in a proper manner: when I came to the passage * from whence the lines, prefixed to this work are taken, my imagination caught the sacred fire, and I pursued the thought, 'till, wearied with the inexhaustible variety which it opened to my view, I sunk into that suspension of sense, which is called A REVERIE; when the soul only wakes, and, breaking through its corporeal incumbrances, ranges at will over the boundless expanse of creation, and joins in converse with congenial spirits.

The

* B. III. l. 444, &c.

The objects about which my mind had been employed remained so strongly imprinted on it, that it immediately continued the scene, but with that consistency and connection, which distinguish the visions of imagination from the confusion of common dreams.

I thought I found myself (I knew not how transported thither) on the confines of that world, which MILTON so beautifully describes. The idea of such a scene raised my curiosity so high, that, in defiance of the dread of venturing alone in a place where I was an utter stranger, I was going to mix directly with the multitude, that I might take a more distinct and particular view of the wonderful things which I expected to see there, when a being of most tremendous aspect, appeared suddenly before me: "Hold, presumptuous mortal! (said he, with a frown that nailed me to the ground) nor run into a labyrinth, from whence it is impossible to return, without the assistance of some superior being to direct your steps, and disperse the mists of prejudice and ignorance, which at present obstruct your sight."

Such an interdiction was not ineffectual: I stopped, abashed and terrified; but curiosity again getting the better of my fear, "Pardon, mighty lord! (answered I, prostrating myself before him) the error of inadvertency, nor impute to thy servant the fault of his nature. The description I have read of this place has inflamed my soul with a curiosity too strong to bear. O let thy beneficence indulge it for a moment. To thy direction I resign myself. Do thou present the necessary clue to guide my steps, and open my eyes to the wonders which surround me."

"Arise! (replied he, smoothing his brow, with a smile of complacency) I blame not thy curiosity; under the direction of reason, its impulse is the strongest and most extensive cause of human knowledge. But the more important duty of my particular station permits me not to attend to the gratification of it myself. I preside over these regions of folly and confusion, which my strictest vigilance is not more than necessary to keep from falling into utter anarchy. However, thou shalt not be disappointed. The spirit who conducts my sub-

jects

jects hither from the earth will soon arrive. Him will I order to go with you, and give you the gratification you desire, which the nature of his office, and his conversation in the world enable him to do more satisfactorily than I can, who am too much taken up with other matters, to attend to such trifles as the actions of mankind. And opportunely here he comes. ARIEL, (continued he, addressing himself to another spirit who just then joined us) this mortal is permitted to take a view of our mysterious empire. Do thou conduct him in safety through it, and inform him of every thing that is proper for him to know, and for thee to reveal."

At these words he vanished from my sight; and Ariel advancing to me with an air of affability and kindness, "Come, thou most favoured of mortals, (said he) and enjoy an indulgence hitherto denied to man. The adventurous bard, whose bold description led you hither, snatched but a general glimpse, as he flew by. The whole shall be disclosed to you, and all its mysteries explained.

Encouraged by the manner in which he spoke, I raised my eyes from the ground, where fear and reverence had fixed them, and addressing myself to him, "Accept, (said I) most gracious spirit, the warmest expression of my gratitude for this inestimable favour. Lead where thou wilt, thy willing servant follows; but if it be not too much for me to ask, vouchsafe first to inform me what is this place called, and who are the inhabitants of it.

"The world, which is thus opened to your view, (answered he) is **THE PARADISE OF FOOLS**; where self-deluded man, thro' endless ages, continues to act over the absurdities in which he blindly placed the happiness of his life. 'Till you have compleated the appointed probation of mortality, and are purified by death, from the stains and infirmities of a corruptible body, you are not able to see their actions in their genuine colours, stripped of the disguises which impose upon themselves; for as they are actuated by their former passions, they still labour under all the weaknesses and imperfections of their former senses: however, I will

will remove the veil for a moment, and give you a sight of human nature, in a state that never was before revealed to mortal eyes."—Saying this, he touched my eyes with the end of a wand which he held in his hand, when instantly a flood of light broke in upon them, that illumined all my soul.

It is impossible for words to convey an idea of what I felt at this view of human life, divested of all the specious colouring which men mutually put on to deceive each other, and that with such eagerness and industry, as often to hide the imposition from themselves also in the end, and so become the dupes of their own deceit. Amazed at such a scene, I could not help exclaiming, "O sapient spirit, what can this be? The actions of these beings bear the strongest resemblance to those of man; but there is a vein of folly runs through them all, which makes them look as absurd and ridiculous as the tricks of children in their mimic plays. Can this be their eternal employment? Or is it possible that they should be insensible of the grossness of such folly?"

"Such is the life of man, (returned the spirit with a significant smile) and so appeared the most important of his actions, to beings unaffected with the weakness of his nature. This world is, as it were, a REFLECTION of that which you have lived in. In it, AS IN A MIRROR, you behold the human heart in all its various situations. You shall have a view of the whole; but to make the gratification of your curiosity the more satisfactory, I will lead you first to yon fantastic scene, where your knowledge of some of the actors will make the farce more interesting to you; for you must observe, that as this world of ours is but a shadow of that of man, it necessarily is divided like it into different countries, which bear the same names, and are in every respect under the same circumstances as these. But I see your sight is dazzled with this extraordinary degree of light; I will therefore draw the veil over it again, and restore things to that appearance which is suited to your present state.

"Whenever occasion requires, I will remove the obstacles which obstruct human sense, and enable you

to perceive the particular objects which I point to, at the greatest distance; free from the confusion that an unlimited view of such a complicated scene must unavoidably throw you into. The walls of the closet shall be transparent to your eye; and the secret whisper sound distinctly in your ear." — With these words, he waved his wand before my eyes; and immediately the scene sunk into its original obscurity.

The spirit then took my hand, and rising with a bound, we glided through the air, with a velocity that distanced thought, though without any apparent motion of our own, till we arrived at the place which he fixed on as a proper station for our purpose.

As soon as we stopped, "We are now (said he) in the midst of the busy scene; but I have made your form imperceptible to those purblind beings, so that you may indulge your curiosity, without interruption or discovery."

CHAP. II.

fruitless reflections. The history of Mr. SUGARCANE is introduced by that of his illustrious father.

THE first thing that caught my attention, when I had recovered from the astonishment with which my method of travelling had struck me, was a mixed multitude of all ages and degrees of mankind, clapping their hands, and shouting round a person, who was addressing them in the most insinuating manner, while people, employed by him, served them with wine, in quantities sufficient to drown every glimmering of reason, and deprive them of all power of attending to what he said.

My guide saw my surprize, and without waiting for my desiring an explanation of the cause of it, resumed his discourse in these words, which he uttered in a voice, that, to the gross senses of the beings round us, seemed like the soft whisper of the passing breeze.

"I see you are amazed at the unaccountable extravagance of the scene before you. This one instance, even

even were there not ten thousand others equally flagrant, would be sufficient to shew how absolutely folly rules the heart of man.

“Of all the transactions of human life, there is scarce one of more real importance to it than this in which these people are at a present engaged. They are chusing a person to represent them in the legislature; to protect their properties, to promote their interests, and provide laws for the preservation and increase of their happiness and glory; and consequently into the hands of this representative do they commit the care of every thing justly dear to them in the world. (You are to take notice, that in conformity to the illusion under which these insatuated beings act, I speak of them and their actions, as if they still were in the world they have left; and this caution I give you, once for all, to prevent mistake and confusion.)

“But what are the qualifications required for this sacred trust? and by what arts does the candidate for it insinuate himself into the confidence of the people, to obtain such an unlimited power over them? Examining the scene before you, and there you see the whole mystery. The ambitious are plied with promises, the covetous with bribes, and all with liquor, till they are heated to a degree of intoxication sufficient to make them give credit to whatever he says, it matters not how contradictory to common sense, and the conduct of his past life: for who could be expected to sacrifice his fortune, and prostitute his reason in the manner this person does, to a romantic desire of doing service to those, who are so wretchedly improvident that they will not serve themselves? What has he who sells himself a right to expect, but to be sold again?

“Thus far the electors seem to be the only fools, and to leave a name of still a blacker import to their elected representative. But to a nearer view the imaginary difference vanishes, and all appear equally entitled to admission into this place.

“For who, that gave the least attention to the voice of reason, would dissipate his own wealth, and
sacrifice

sacrifice the solid happiness of independance, to acquire a power of committing a breach of trust, as absurd as it is perfidious? Or what are the mighty advantages even proposed by the most sanguine pursuer of such a scheme? Nothing but a deceitful smile of court-favour, an ignominious preference in the execution of some iniquitous job, for which he receives the paltry reward of a precarious pension or employment, the value of which is inconsiderable, in comparison of what he has lavished in the infamous pursuit; not to mention the prostitution of his conscience and honour.

“ Nor does the folly of his electors, in suffering themselves to be seduced by such base motives, in the least acquit him of perfidy. The most venal elector who ever took a bribe, would refuse the candidate with detestation, who should openly avow the iniquity of his intentions, and tell him, he bought his power on purpose to sell it again. Professions of honesty, however improbable, are always expected; and though partiality palliates to himself his own venality and corruption, he looks for promises of the opposite virtues from the candidate, which he implicitly believes, because it is his interest that he should have them.

“ Thus gross as this prevarication is, it obviates every excuse the candidate can make for his corruption, and convicts him of perfidy even against his equally corrupt elector. But not to dwell upon the iniquity of this practice, there is a degree of folly in it, that would exceed belief, did not too frequent experience prove it. It is selling a man's birth-right for even less than a mess of pottage; for what security has the elector of enjoying his bribe, or the representative his pension, when the very act that earns them these wretched wages of prostitution, absolutely enslaves them to the tyranny of that power which they have thus jointly laboured to erect, and which can deprive them of these and every other emolument of life at pleasure?

“ I have been insensibly led into these reflections, by the execrable folly of the scene before us; but, obvious and just as they are, the force of them will appear in a still stronger light, when illustrated by a short view of the life of this very candidate, the circumstances of

which prove the truth of every remark that I made, beyond a possibility of doubt. General reasoning is too often founded on false principles, and leads the unwary mind into error ; but instances from matter of fact can never deceive.

“ His name is *Sugarcane* : he was born in *London*, where his father, for some little time, followed one of the meanest mechanic trades ; to which, after unexpectedly outliving the neglects and cruelties of a parish nurse, he had been bred at the parish charge.

“ The sanguineness of his temper equalled the strength of his constitution, and would not permit him to remain long contented in so low a station, though poverty seemed to preclude every possible hope rising to an higher, except by the slow steps of honest industry. But this he despised as beneath him ; and being freed from every restraint of honesty and virtue, by the principles which he had imbibed in his education at a charity-school, he resolved to strike out a shorter way, or fall in the attempt.

“ Accordingly, in a little time after his marriage, he quitted his trade, and laid out his wife’s fortune, which was no more than the savings of a life of servitude, on the stock of a public house, as the way in which he could exert his abilities to the best advantage.

“ In the course of his education at the charity-school, he had formed acquaintances with several of the most promising youths of the age, his school-fellows, the vivacity of whose parts had been early displayed in offering insults to the very hands which reached them bread, patrolling the streets at midnight, beating the watch, breaking up brothels, which refused to submit to their pleasure, and standing bullies for whores : and who as they advanced to riper years shewed equal genius and spirit, in striking out and executing various ways for remedying the partiality of fortune, and wresting her favours from the less worthy hands into which she had blindly given them.

“ With these he immediately improved his former acquaintance into the closest intimacy, not only affording them a harbour in his house when they were under

der apprehension of the ungenerous severity of the laws, (for few of them ever fell from the hopes of their youth, or relinquished the practices in which they had been so early trained) but also frequently purchasing the prizes which they had so gallantly taken at the hazard of their lives, and so saving them from the additional danger of offering them to sale to strangers. In return for which services they generally gave him such cheap bargains, that the profit overweighed his fears, and confirmed his hopes of making an easy fortune in a short time.

“ But this happy prospect was soon overcast. Some of his most intimate friends having the bad luck not to come off so cleverly in their enterprizes as usual, his zeal for the public good prompted him to turn evidence against them; by which precaution also, he prevented their making discoveries to his disadvantage. But though he saved his life by this prudence, circumstances appeared so strong against him upon the whole, as the original contriver, and principal manager of the scheme, that he was ordered to take a voyage to the *West-Indies*, to assist in civilizing the savage natives, and improve the interests of an infant colony, by his superior abilities and address.

“ I have been so particular in this affair, which happened when the person before us was about three years old, because it laid the foundation of his present fortune. His father naturally took him with him; and as his prudence had made him be always upon his guard, he was able to make such provision for his voyage, that it was neither so uncomfortable, nor his prospect so desperate, as is usual with persons in his circumstances.

“ The first thing he did on his arrival, was to purchase a plantation, which he was able to stock so well, that in a very few years, between the profits which he reaped from that, and the advantages his superior knowledge gave him in other dealings, he not only acquired a fortune beyond his most sanguine expectations, but also arose to the highest honours and power, in that part of the world, to which the ignominious manner of his going there was no obstruction, as it had been the general case.

CHAP. III.

The hero of the tale makes his appearance. The happy fruits of good education.

“ **I**T may be judged that his worship’s mind was too intent upon matters of more moment to permit his taking much thought about the education of his son. Indeed, the notions he had formed of such affairs, from the education he had received himself, made him think any great trouble or expence about such a trifle quite unnecessary. He therefore had him taught to read and write a little by an attorney, who had unluckily carried the practice of his profession rather too far in his own country, by signing a client’s name to receipts for money, without his knowledge, for which he had been compelled to travel hither, where he now served his worship in the capacity of his clerk; and the politer accomplishments of dancing, musick, fencing, &c. &c. he was instructed in by a young gentleman from the theatre, whose intense application to the business of his profession had so entirely wrapped him up in personated characters, that he had unfortunately forgot to lay them aside, and re-assume his own in common affairs of life; but had gone in many different ones, according to the parts he meant to play, to different tradesmen with whom he had a desire to have dealings, who, upon the discovery of the mistake, were such illiberal discouragers of merit, as to impute it to a fraudulent design, and lay him also under the necessity of making the same voyage.

“ As the young squire’s parts were lively, he soon made a happy proficiency under such eminent masters. Before he was quite fifteen, he could dance, sing, and play on the guitar almost as well as his master; and repeat several speeches out of plays, which he had learned by rote from him, to the great delight and surprize of all who heard him: and by eighteen, he could make a shift to read a play himself, and write a billet-doux, as well as was necessary for a gentleman of his rank and fortune.

“ Nor

“ Nor was the care of his tutors confined to the accomplishments of his person only: they also formed his mind in proper principles, civil, social, moral, and religious. Accordingly, to open his way of thinking, and free him from the narrow prejudices of vulgar education, he was taught, that religion was a cheat; virtue, want of spirit; and law a bugbear, fit only to restrain and terrify the ignorant and poor: and these opinions, far from being merely speculative, ruled the constant practice of his life. Bred up among a croud of slaves, who trembled at his nod, he looked upon himself as entitled to treat every one with haughtiness and tyranny. He indulged every passion with which youth and flattery could inflame his heart, laughed at every thing that was called sacred, and enquired what was law, only for the pleasure of transgressing it.

“ While his pleasures affected only himself, he was safe from interruption or restraint from his father; but at length, some consequences happening to attend them which interfered with his business, such as the disabling and deaths of some of his slaves, whom the squire had diverted himself with proving his strength and dexterity at his weapons upon; and the flight of others, for rapes committed on their wives and daughters, he resolved to send him over to *England*, to polish his manners, and complete his education.

“ Nor were these, weighty as they were, the only motives for his forming this resolution. An affair of another nature made him also think his son's absence necessary, at least, for some time.

C H A P. IV.

Love triumphant over nature, but foiled by art. Theatrical morality.

“ **T**HERE lived in the neighbourhood of his workshop a clergyman who had been obliged to leave his native country, to avoid being thrown into jail for a debt he had contracted by going to law, to defend a living which had been given him by a nobleman,

man, to whom he had been tutor, and whose right of presentation was disputed by the bishop of the diocese.

" His lawyers had encouraged him to carry on the suit by the most confident assurances of success, and his patron promised him to defray the expence of it ; but on his being cast by the bishop, his lordship denied his having ever given him such a promise ; and his lawyers absolutely refused to make even the least abatement in the bill of costs, which they immediately brought him, and which was so entirely beyond his ability to discharge, that he had no way of preserving his liberty but by flight.

" It must be thought, that the conversation of such a person could not be much in the taste of his new neighbours ; but the inoffensiveness of his conduct, and the convenience of the influence which his virtues soon obtained him over the ignorant savages, insensibly reconciled them to him, and even gained him some degree of their esteem and respect.

" *Euphranor* (that was the clergyman's name) had a daughter much about the age of our young squire, who was blessed with every beauty of mind and body. Neighbourhood naturally introduced an acquaintance between their families, which was soon improved into a tenderer connection between the young pair.

" Nor was this to be wondered at ! Her it was impossible for man to behold unmoved ; and in the gifts of fortune, and the external advantages of form, he had a confessed superiority over all the young men in that part of the world. As to the defects of his mind, they seemed to proceed rather from want of proper education than from any natural propensity to vice ; and therefore, as he was still so young, might easily be removed.

" From the time he became acquainted with *Maria*, (so *Euphranor's* daughter was called) his heart felt sensations which it had ever been a stranger to before. He was unhappy every moment he was from her, yet when in her sight, there was a majestic delicacy in her whole behaviour, that humbled him in his own eyes, and held him in a state of distant awe and almost adoration.

" This

" This necessarily had an immediate effect upon his whole conduct. He grew thoughtful, discontented, and reserved; complained of the deficiencies of his education, which her accomplishments of every kind shewed him in the most mortifying light, and avoided the company, and expressed an abhorrence of the pleasures he had always been so fond of before.

" Such a change soon alarmed his theatrical tutor, (the other had been long dismissed from his care of him) as he saw that it threatened the subversion of his ascendancy over him. To obviate such a misfortune required his immediate care; in which he was so far from doubting of success, that he even hoped to turn it to his advantage, by his experience and address, and make it a foundation for a firmer power than he yet enjoyed.

" Accordingly he threw himself one evening in his way, as he was returning from *Euphranor's*; and observing him more than usually thoughtful, " What is the matter? (said he, clapping him familiarly on the shoulder) Has *Dulcinea* frowned upon her love-sick swain? Hah! hah! hah! Come cheer up; we will find some way to appease her wrath. What, sigh for a woman? for shame, let no such thing be said: it is beneath you, quite beneath you.

*Who'd be that sordid foolish thing call'd man? —
The lordly bull ranges thro' all the field,
And from the herd singling his female out,
Enjoys her, and abandons her at will. —*

" There's an example for you to imitate; follow the dictates of nature, unsophisticated by priestcraft, and be happy. What mischief have priests done in the world! If it were not for the writings of poets, and the practice of players, to open the eyes of mankind, there would be no such thing as happiness or pleasure. Before men were made fools of by religion, the sexes conversed without restraint, and variety gave a relish to enjoyment: and so it does still in my country. Dear *London*! thou paradise of pleasure! there is opportunity for indulging every passion: opportunity, that is not neglected. There the wise world laughs at every

foolish notion which interferes with delight. Beauty is not kept only to be looked at ; it meets desire half way, and courts the use it was designed for ; and so it would here, if men would manage right, and not raise obstacles to their own happiness."

" This elaborate speech had the desired effect. The awe in which the squire had been kept by his mistress, had already begun to sit very uneasy upon him, and his own inclinations confirmed his tutor's arguments. Accordingly he resolved to follow his directions for the attainment of a pleasure, which he saw no other prospect of enjoying.

" He no sooner signified this resolution, than it filled his tutor with the highest joy. He embraced him in rapture ; and, in the fullness of his heart, disclosed a variety of schemes for accomplishing their design, all objections to the justice of which he easily removed ; proving by the unerring morality of modern comedy, that *woman is but a creature made for man's pleasure, and therefore that every method for making her subservient to this original end of her creation, is lawful for him to use.*

" This doctrine he confirmed both by the practice of the finest gentlemen, and by the implicit confession of the finest ladies of the age, who would never go to see the plays, in which those principles are openly inculcated, with such eagerness, nor encourage the players, whose greatest merit consists in giving them all the force and graces of expression and action, and whose own lives are invariably formed upon them, with such distinguished marks of their favour, if they could dispute the truth, or disapproved the practice of them.

" This reasoning appeared so conclusive, that it removed every shadow of scruple ; and they directly entered into consultation upon the means for putting their schemes in execution : which they settled without any foolish restraint from the mistaken prejudices of honour, virtue, or religion.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

A well-laid scheme disappointed. The great advantage of being well read in the drama. The scene of action is changed.

“PURSUANT to their plot the squire went next morning to visit *Maria*, as usual ; when he declared his passion with the most solemn assurances of sincerity ; as an incontestible proof of which, he proposed an immediate marriage, but to be kept secret from both their fathers, till they should find some happy opportunity of gaining their approbation of it.

“ At the former part of this proposal, a modest blush over-spread *Maria*’s face ; and shewed that her heart had no objection to it ; but the first mention of secrecy restored her to herself. She thanked him politely for the favourable opinion he professed to have of her ; but assured him, at the same time, that she never indulged even a thought which she imagined improper for her father’s immediate knowledge ; much less would venture upon the most important action of life, without his advice and approbation.

“ The determined manner in which she said this, convinced her lover, that it was in vain to press her farther. He therefore returned to his tutor, greatly dejected at the disappointment : for had she consented, the tutor was to have disguised himself, and personated the chaplain of a man of war that happened to lie upon the coast at that time, to marry them ; which his theatrical talents enabled him to do, without danger of detection, and then, when his pupil’s passion was gratified, it was only confessing the stratagem, (and all stratagems are lawful in love and war) and parting with her at once ; or, if she should prove refractory, and discover the whole, his worship’s power, which would not fail to be exerted on such an occasion, was sufficient to bear them through triumphant.

“ But unexpected as this disappointment was, the tutor soon found resources in the fertility of his own genius to remedy it. After a pause of a few moments,

" *Calista!* (said he, speaking to himself as if in deep consideration) *Calista!* and then prove a criminal correspondence, both before and after her marriage, with some fast friend who would not deny the charge! Yes! that might do; but stay!—*Monimia!* Aye! *Monimia* is the thing.—Then speaking to the squire, as if he did not know that he had over-heard him:

" Well then (said he) if she will preclude herself from the poor consolation of pity, let her blame herself. My bow is not trusting to one string. Yes! you shall have her, my friend: you shall have her as long as you please; and when your desires are satiated, you shall get rid of her without reproach. My plot, it is true, is deeply laid; but I have precedents enough in dramatic writ to justify it. You shall marry her publicly, (leave me to reconcile your father to it!) and then what is easier at any time than to catch some faithful friend in bed with her, which may be brought about by your stealing from her in her sleep, and letting me, for instance, take your place; after which a divorce will be obtained without difficulty.

" Then pluming himself in his sagacity, and strutting a step or two back and forward with an air of importance, " I have not studied the drama so long (said he) to be at a loss now for a scheme to supplant the virtue of a girl, or elude the vigilance of a bookish doating father; let her therefore tell him her story, as soon as she pleases, I am prepared for both. As for his worship, I know that he will readily join in any thing to pull down the pride of that parson, in revenge for his having the assurance to arraign his conduct by preaching up to others, and practising himself a course of life, in all respects, so opposite to his own."

" But deeply as this design was laid, it met with the same fate, and from the same motive, with the former. The moment her lover left her, *Maria* informed her father of his proposal, who in the uprightness of his heart went directly, and disclosed it to his worship. It is impossible to describe the rage into which such a story threw him. He immediately sent off his son to *England*, to prevent the disgrace of his making so unworthy a match; and far from being obliged

obliged to *Euphranor* for making the discovery, bore him ever after the most implacable hatred, for being father to the object of his son's passion.

"As for the tutor, the time appointed for his travels not being yet expired, he was obliged to stay behind, and trust his pupil to his own management."

CHAP. VI.

Squire SUGARCANE arrives in England. An odd medley of high and low life. Prejudice of education involves him in many disagreeable circumstances, and at length brings him into eminent danger.

"OUR hero arrived in *England* without any accident. His father, it may be judged, did not burthen him with much advice. Two things only he cautioned him against, which were extravagance (for his pride had prompted him to give him unlimited credit) and matrimony without his express approbation. In every thing else, he left him to his own government, or indeed, more properly speaking, to chance.

"But he might have spared himself the trouble even of this much. The moment his son was out of his sight, he scorned all restraint, however easy and just; and if his father's advice had any influence upon him, it was only to raise a desire of opposition to it.

"Accordingly, as soon as he got to *London*, he ran into every fashionable expence, with an eagerness that seemed to court ruin. He had houses sumptuously furnished at all places of pleasurable resort; he set up equipages which vied in magnificence with those of a sovereign prince, kept running-horses, hounds, and whores; and to complete his character, played deeply at every game, in which art and experience could give his antagonists an advantage over his ignorance.

"All this he did, from an absurd vanity of following the fashion; to indulge his own taste, which the manner of his education had fixed upon the most vulgar pleasures, and grossest sensualities, he ran into the
opposite

opposite extreme of low life. Thus he oftener slept in some filthy brothel, than in any of his own elegant houses; while his equipage waited whole mornings at his door, he was in a dirty disguise driving an hackney coach; he got drunk with his grooms, and rode his own races; and the conversation of his dog-boys was the greatest pleasure he reaped from his hounds. The mistresses whom he kept at the most profuse expence, he seldom ever saw; his amours rarely soaring higher than the humble patrollers of the streets; and while he was throwing away thousands among gamblers of fashion, his heart languished for a game of put or all-fours, for a pint of beer, or a dram of gin; and he often stole away, from the most elegant entertainments which luxury could devise, to carouse and riot among chairmen and porters in a night cellar.

“Such a course of life necessarily involved him in numberless scrapes and troubles. Accustomed to converse with none but dependants, and lord it over slaves, who dared not even murmur at his cruelty and abuses, he could not bear to be treated as an equal by persons whose more moderate expences made him think them of inferior fortunes; and on the slightest contradiction to his will, in his servants, or any others of the lower stations of life, would fly out into his usual outrages, beating, and wounding them in the most cruel manner.

“The consequences of this conduct were always disagreeable. The former returned the insolence of his behaviour with the most mortifying contempt; or with personal affronts, which pride and cowardice equally prevented his resenting in the only manner that could put an end to them; and the harpies of the law extorted ample satisfaction from his purse for the injuries of the latter, and that often after he had suffered sufficiently before from the superior strength of those who complained of him.

“Such an hurricane of riot and debauchery was too violent to last long. An accident that happened in one of his nocturnal exploits lowered his spirits for a time, and gave his pleasure a less tumultuous turn.

“A

"A party, among whom he was, having sallied out one night from the tavern in the madness of inebriation, to scour the streets, and signalize their bravery on all who should be so unfortunate as to fall in their way, stumbled upon a watchman asleep upon his stand. The figure of the wretch would have bespoke compassion from any human creatures under the direction of reason. He was worn out with age, and appeared an object much more proper to receive, than give protection. But the misery of his appearance only raised their mirth; and one of them of uncommon wit and humour saying, what a surprize it would be to the old fellow, to awake in the other world, our hero, who was the most drunk in the company, and perhaps most accustomed to such feats, directly drew his sword, and plunged it into his body."

"Such an action struck them all with horror. They instantly took to flight, in which he attempted to follow them; but conscious affright deprived him of the little strength which liquor had left, and he fell at his length in the street, where he lay unable to rise, though not insensible of the danger that hung over his head, his apprehensions of which were far from being lessened by hearing the wretch cry out murder; as he thought it impossible for him to out-live such a wound, though the joke he had designed was disappointed, and it happened not to put him to immediate death.

"The first cry of murder brought a number of the neighbouring watchmen to the place, who found the squire with his sword drawn lying on the ground by him, and every circumstance of his appearance confirming his guilt. But if this had not been sufficient, there wanted not direct proof of it; for some of his companions considering the consequences of having been known to have been in his company, and aware of the danger that might attend his impeaching them, returned immediately to the place, and charged him directly with the fact.

"On this he was dragged away to the round-house; where his fright soon recovered him from his drunkenness, and shewed him all the horrors of his situation.

In

In vain did he offer immense sums for liberty to make his escape ; the affair was now public, and the watchman's wound was declared mortal, by a surgeon who had been called up to dress him.

“ Accordingly, after suffering the insults of the watch, and the revilings of his companions, who strove to shew their own innocence by aggravating his guilt, for the remainder of the night, he was taken before a magistrate next morning, where the circumstances of his crime were examined into with the most excruciating minuteness, and the consequences blazoned in such terrifying colours as were sufficient to strike the boldest heart with despair ; and when thus properly prepared, he was committed to the common prison, to wait the sentence of the law, among the vilest malefactors who disgrace the human name.

CHAP. VII.

An hair-breadth escape. The happiness of being absolutely disengaged in life. An unexpected piece of news shews the perverseness of the human heart.

“ **T**HE news of the squire's misfortune was immediately spread over the whole town, and of course soon came to the ears of his father's correspondent ; who, though he was highly dissatisfied with his manner of life, thought it was his duty not to desert him in such a dreadful condition. He therefore went directly to the magistrate, and learning the circumstances of the affair from him, found reason to suspect that it was not so bad as was represented ; but was aggravated with a design of extorting money from the terrified criminal.

“ In consequence of this suspicion, he sent for a surgeon of character, and going to the place where the watchman lay (an attorney's house) insisted on seeing his wound opened ; when it appeared so far from being mortal, that the surgeon declared it was not even dangerous, with the least care, the sword having happily

hit upon a rib, and so only glanced between that and the skin.

“ On this discovery, the merchant demanded his friend’s being admitted to bail ; and on the magistrate’s consenting, because he did not dare to refuse, went himself to the prison, with the joyful tidings : where he found the desponding wretch surrounded by a gang of solicitors, and knights of the post, who were planning schemes for his escape by perjury and chicane, and at the same time exaggerating his danger to enhance the price of their own damnation ; in earnest of which, and to quicken their invention, they had already received all the money in his pocket, which amounted to a considerable sum.

“ At the first sight of the merchant, these harpies vanished like owls at the appearance of the sun. The good man saw the squire’s distress, and judging that it might be a proper time to work upon him, softened thus by fear, he sat down and entered into a friendly expostulation with him on the folly, vice, and danger of such a life as he had led ; and concluded by wishing, that his present almost miraculous escape might make a proper impression upon him, for the remainder of his life.

“ The squire heard the former part of his discourse with listless inattention ; but at the mention of his escape, he fell upon his knees, and eagerly kissing his friend’s hand, conjured him to confirm the happy word.

“ It is impossible to describe his situation on being satisfied that his danger was over. His spirits, ever in extreme, were raised as high as they had been dejected before ; so sudden a transition from despair to happiness (for so his joy for that moment might justly be called) almost depriving him of his senses. He broke out into such inconsistent extravagancies of exultation, that he made his friend for some time fear he should utterly lose his reason. But his strength soon failing under such accumulated fatigue, his spirits sunk into a settled calm ; and he left the prison in the most rational state of mind he had been in since he came to England.

“ The

“ The horrors he had endured in this affair made an impression on his mind, which influenced the remainder of his life. His danger determined him for ever against such exploits as that which drew him into it; and the behaviour of his companions gave him so strong an aversion to such society, that he refused their visits of congratulation on his return to his own house, and never would mix with them more.

“ He was now in such a state of suspense, for the choice of his future life, that had any principles of virtue been inculcated in his mind by education, he might most probably have followed their direction. But when the voice of pleasure, the tumults of dissipation and vice were silenced, all was a wretched void within him, and he was really obliged to give into the first scheme of active idleness which chance suggested, for want of knowing what else to do.

“ Just in this critical time, he happened to receive a packet of letters from home. That of his father he threw carelessly by, scarce half read through: but the sight of his tutor’s hand raising an expectation of some news concerning *Maria*, his passion for whom he had never been able entirely to subdue, he opened it with eagerness, though he had no reason to expect any account particularly interesting to him.

“ His tutor informed him, that his father looking upon her as the cause of his being obliged to send his son to *England*, the moment he was gone shewed the most rancorous hatred to her and *Euphranor*, which his power gave him so many opportunities of wreaking, that he made their lives quite miserable: they resolved, therefore, to leave that country, and seek some happier retreat elsewhere; but as they were just ready to go, *Euphranor* received a letter from the brother of the lord to whom he had been tutor, to inform him of his lordship’s death, and desire that he would return to *England* as soon as possible, to take possession of a very considerable living just then become vacant in his gift, and which he kept for him; adding, that he had discharged the debt, which had been the occasion of his going abroad; and that on receipt of this news they left the place directly, not more to their own satisfac-

tion

tion, than to the mortification of his father, at their good fortune and escape from his power.

" This account threw him into a violent conflict : his heart felt the strongest emotions at the thoughts of her being in the same country with him. He at first resolved to find her out ; and pleased himself to think how agreeably she must be surprized at the great improvements she would see in his appearance and address, which he did not doubt would make such an impression on her in his favour, as should greatly facilitate his desires.

" But a moment's reflection overthrew all these flattering hopes ; and shewed him the utter improbability of her ever listening to the addresses, or even receiving the visits of a man by whom she had been treated in so base a manner ; for to mitigate the severity of his father's rage, and wipe off the disgrace of having proposed marriage to one so much beneath him, he had openly declared the designs he had formed for her ruin.

" But this was not what gave him the greatest pain. The advantageous change in her father's affairs removing the only objection which he thought could be made to her, it immediately occurred to him, that some person of distinction would most probably be captivated by her charms, at her return to *England*, and marry her ; and it was death to him to think that she should make any other man happy, though he had lost all hopes of ever obtaining her himself.

" But these disagreeable reflections soon gave place to thoughts of another nature. His mind had been in such a continued agitation ever since his coming to *London*, that he had not once remembered the many fine things his tutor had so often told him of the theatres ; nor the luscious descriptions he had drawn of the pleasures to be found in the company of the players of both sexes. But a repetition of them in this letter had an immediate effect upon him, in his present undetermined state ; and he resolved to look there for that happiness which he had missed of hitherto."

CHAP. VIII.

The pleasures of theatrical society. The squire commences critic and patron. He acts the part of Ixion, and embraces a cloud instead of a goddess.

"IN pursuance of this resolution he directly became almost an inhabitant of the play-house. He made acquaintances with all the players; he attended rehearsals, drank tea in the green-room; and in a very little time had all the terms of theatrical criticism at his fingers ends.

"He now thought himself an happy man. The mirth and wit of the actors, the freedom and ease of the actresses, and the obsequiousness and flattery of both quite charmed him. His table was constantly filled with them; while they in return for his hospitality convinced him, that he had overlooked his own abilities and was really endowed with the most refined taste, and exquisite judgment of the age.

"As soon as he had made this discovery, he assumed all the consequence of this new character. He retailed the phrases of criticism, which he had lately picked up on all occasions, with the most decisive air; spoke with contempt of authors whose names he scarcely knew and praised those of established reputation; but all in general terms, and merely as an echo to the town.

"It may be thought that this course of life, idle and insignificant as it was, must be more harmless at least than that which he had led before; but still it was not free from its inconveniencies also.

"Such a set of company necessarily precluded him from that of all persons whose conversation might have been either an advantage or an honour to him; besides to support the dignity of his character, he was obliged to set up for a patron of the polite arts, which laid him open to the impositions of every ignorant pretender to them; as he was utterly destitute of the least degree of judgment to direct him, in the distribution of the rewards which their flattery and importunities extorted

from his ignorance and vanity ; so that, though he had retrenched most of his former expences, on his entering into the present way of life, he found but very little advantage from his œconomy ; the cravings of his new dependents proving as effectual a drain to his money, as all his more showy extravagancies had been before.

“ But this was only a trifle, in comparison to other consequences which attended this connection. Such a fortune as he possessed was a lure to every scheming genius to try their abilities upon him ; the actresses, in particular, spread open all their nets, to take him in for a settlement at least, if not even entrap him in the marriage noose, as he was a batchelor. This was the secret reason of that officiousness to please him, which has been observed before ; but his attention was too much taken up with the addresses paid to his understanding, to admit his minding those offered to his person.

“ At length, however, one of the female adventurers of the stage hit upon a plan, in which her experience promised her success. She saw that vanity glittered through his shallow heart, and was the ruling principle of all his actions : to catch this, therefore, a gilded bait was all that was necessary. For this purpose, she contrived to convey him a letter, glowing with the warmest professions of love, but lamenting the restraint which a superior station laid her under from making herself known, or gratifying the passion that preyed upon her heart.

“ The receipt of this letter threw him into the highest perplexity ; he ran over every scene of his life, to try if he could, from any circumstance, find out who this enamoured fair could be ; but all in vain. However, this ignorance by no means eased him of his anxiety ; he had too good an opinion of himself to doubt the truth of what she said ; and his darling vanity was too strongly flattered by the thought, to admit his fighting such an honour, could he possibly discover by whom it was done him.

“ The fair one, who saw him every day, soon had an opportunity of observing his distress, which was the

the signal she wanted to convince her that the lure she threw had taken. Accordingly, in a day or two after she wrote him another letter, in which she appointed him a place of meeting, but under the most solemn abjurations of secrecy and honour; when she availed herself so well of her theatrical art of varying her appearance, and personating a fictitious character, that, with the assistance of the play-house cloaths, and a good quantity of paint, she passed upon him for a beautiful young lady of the first quality, who had accidentally been smitten with the charms of his person.

"The delicacy and modest reserve with which she revealed her own passion, and received his addresses, gained so complete a conquest over his intoxicated heart, that he outwent her most sanguine expectations; and made distant proposals of marriage, at the very first interview; but these, the character she acted, would not permit her to understand too readily; and his respect prevented his speaking plainer, on so short an acquaintance.

"But an accident soon removed this difficulty, which was equally distressing to them both, though from different motives. Going to the play the next evening as usual, he was surprised to see *Maria* glittering in all the pride of dress in one of the stage-boxes; the sight of her put him so much off his guard, that, happening to catch her eye, he bowed to her directly in the most familiar manner: but what was his confusion, to find that instead of acknowledging his salute, she turned from him with a look of ineffable contempt.

"Such an affront, in so public a place, could not escape notice. The eyes of every one were immediately fixed upon him in so significant a manner, that he could not stand it; but was forced to retire, bursting with resentment, behind the scenes, where he had the additional mortification to learn, that she was above every attack he could make upon her, being lately married to the young nobleman who was sitting with her, and was the same who had recalled her father and her from the place of their banishment.

"It is impossible to describe the malignant passion which tore his heart at this news: his love was instantly

turned

turned to the most rancorous hatred; and envy prompted him to ruin a happiness which he had not been able to prevent.

“ While he was revolving various schemes for this purpose, his unlucky genius blundered upon one, which drew that mortification ten thousand fold upon his own head which he designed for her. He thought that the safest way he could take to humble her pride (for his courage was cooled from any attempts that might possibly endanger his dear person) was to shew her, that he had been as great a gainer as she by not being married to her, and to return her contempt in kind.

“ Accordingly, at the very next meeting his enamoured fair one indulged him with, he proposed an immediate marriage, which he pressed with such unfeigned ardor, that, after some few struggles between her love for him, and the regard to the dignity of her rank, she consented; her fear of being prevented by her noble friends and family palliating the precipitancy of such a step.

“ The exultations of two persons, happy thus in the success of their designs, well supplied the place of pomp and ceremony at the wedding; but what was the bridegroom’s astonishment next morning, to find a faded veteran of the stage in his arms, instead of a dutchess in all the pride of beauty, rank, and fortune; for the warmth of the night had melted the painted bloom upon her cheeks, and restored her to her natural appearance, which day-light displayed in no very favourable light.

“ He started from her in horror; and as soon as he had recovered the use of speech, which such a sight for some time deprived him of, flew into the most outrageous fury, and swore he would be revenged, in the dreadfulest manner, for such an infamous piece of deceit.

“ But his bride was too well acquainted with the world to be terrified at his threats. She arose with all the expedition, that her delicate regard to decency would permit, and throwing herself at his feet, alledged the violence of her passion as an excuse for her stratagem; and all stratagems, she said, were lawful in love) besought his forgiveness in the tenderest terms, and vowed the

the most exemplary duty, love, and virtue, for the rest of her life, promising to make ample amends for the imaginary disparity of rank; (for his own fortune placed him above regard to mercenary considerations) by his incessant attention to his pleasure.

“ Well as she acted her part, the abused husband remained inflexible, vowing to pursue her with the utmost severity; a resolution which the remembrance of his own treatment of *Maria*, now retorted in such a significant manner on himself, enforced with every motive of hatred and revenge.

“ But his wrath had as little effect upon her, as her entreaties possibly could have upon him. She arose from his feet with an air of disdain; and telling him that if he did not know what was due to the character of his wife, she would soon inform him, dressed herself with the greatest composure, and wishing him a good morning, left him to go to breakfast with what appetite he could.

“ Nor were her threats in vain; she went directly to a lawyer, by whose advice she took such measures as obliged her husband to compound matters with her, and give her such a settlement (as he did not chuse cohabitation) as enabled her to pay the debt of gratitude, and keep those now who had kept her in former days.

“ This affair broke off all his theatrical connections and left him as much at a loss what to do with himself as he had been when he first entered into them. But the death of his father, of which he received the account just as he had concluded this transaction, freed him from this uncertainty, and engaged him in pursuits of a quite different nature from those he had hitherto followed.

C H A P. IX.

Mr. SUGARCANE commences statesman. Signal instances of ministerial confidence and favour. A common change. The conduct of a patriot.

THE death of his father put Mr. *Sugarcane* (for he must no longer be called by the familiar title of squire) in possession of such an immense fortune, that he immediately considered himself as one of the pillars of the state; and looking on every thing else as beneath his dignity and importance, devoted himself entirely to the care of nations.

In pursuance of this resolution, he waited directly on the minister, and displaying his own consequence in the strongest colours, informed him of his desire to become a member of the senate, and offered him his services in the most unlimited terms.

The minister, whom long experience had taught to read the human heart, immediately saw what use he might make of such an offer, from so sanguine a volunteer. Accordingly he thanked him for the honour of his friendship in the most polite manner, encouraged him in so laudable a design, and treated him with such a respectful intimacy, as quite won his shallow heart.

As soon therefore as he was satisfied that he had him secure, he told him one day, with an air of the highest satisfaction, that he now had an opportunity of shewing him the confidence he had in him, and at the same time procuring him that rank in the state which he deserved, by getting him returned for one of his boroughs.

Mr. *Sugarcane's* joy at this news may easily be conceived; he thanked him in the warmest terms of gratitude for so great a favour; and on the minister's expressing some concern for the expence which might possibly attend an opposition that was designed against his interest, declared the strongest contempt for such sorry considerations, and insisted on the honour of paying the whole himself.

“ Accordingly

"Accordingly he went directly down to the borough, where he entered on the complicated business of electioneering with such spirit, and carried it on with so profuse an expence, that his opponents were glad to submit to the minister's terms, which they had absolutely rejected before, to avoid the vexation and disgrace of being foiled by a stratagem.

"It may be thought that his being made a peer of in so notorious a manner, would have made him feel his folly; but it was no such thing. Far from being offended, he took it as an instance of the highest confidence in his friendship, on the minister's representing to him, that the business of the state could not have been carried on without giving him up for that time, and promising to make him ample amends on a more favourable occasion.

"Gross as this imposition was, he blindly submitted to it several times successively, cajoled by assurances of friendship, and artful hints of having his services rewarded in the end by a peerage.

"He lived thus upon air for several years, squandering more in pursuit of a shadow than the acquisition of the substance could ever possibly refund him. At length, however, his eyes were opened; and he saw the abuse he had suffered in the most mortifying light; but instead of being cured of his madness, it only gave it another turn. He directly commenced patriot in the present sense of the word, declaiming against the minister and his measures, with as much vehemence and heat as he had declaimed for them before; and lavishing his fortune as profusely in opposition to his interests as he had formerly done to support it.

"Evident as the motives of this change were, the giddy multitude suffered themselves to be deceived by it; or rather indeed, they received it as a colour to palliate the absurdity of their confiding in him, and justify their taking the bribes with which he bought them.

"On this system he proceeds now, undiscouraged by the many disappointments he has met with, and the difficulties into which such complicated dissipation

of his fortune, immensely great as it was, has thrown his affairs. In his present attempt, it is true, he has a prospect of success; but how far this will answer his expectation of making him happy, or what use even he will make of it, the least experience of human life sufficiently shews. — But I see an uneasiness in your looks. If I have said any thing that you do not comprehend, speak your doubt with freedom, and I will resolve it with pleasure.”

“ This condescension (answered I) O most benevolent spirit! is agreeable to the excellence of thy nature; and I were unworthy of the favour you offer, if I let a false modesty, a proud reluctance to shew my ignorance, prevent my accepting it. It is most true, that you have said some things which I cannot understand the meaning of. You say he commenced a patriot, in the present sense of the word. Can any word be plainer? or what sense but the obvious natural one can it be taken in?”

“ Your inexperience, in the ways of the world, (replied he with a smile) leads you into this difficulty. Your notions are all merely speculative, formed on reflection and not on observation. You consider things as they ought to be, supposing man to act upon the principles of reason, not as they are, under so contradictory a direction; and this mistake of the merely-learned, is the cause of the very little service which their works do in the world.

“ A patriot, in the original and proper meaning of the word, is the noblest title which can be given to man; and includes every virtue, moral, social, and civil. But so entirely is the use of words changed with the course of things, that stripped of every idea which can deserve respect, it implies only a factious opposer of the measures of the court, who pretends a regard to the public welfare, to gain the confidence of the people, and make himself of sufficient consequence to be admitted to a share of the spoil which he declaims against. (You are to observe that I speak in the general. That there are sometimes men who really deserve the title in its most exalted sense, and possess every virtue which they make profession of, I will not deny; but

they are too few to place in opposition to the multitude and the exception only proves the rule.) You hear with what vehemence Mr. *Sugarcane* harangued against the minister, accusing him of betraying the interests and over-turning the constitution of his country, and founding his own pretensions to merit with the public on the effectual means he designed to make use of, to defeat such pernicious designs. These professions, you see, have been successful; how far they were sincere there is a scene just opening which will inform you.

The crowd by this time was dispersed, satisfied with what they had got, or expecting no more then; and the candidate was retired to enjoy his success with a select friends. But scarce was he seated, when he received word, that a strange gentleman wanted to speak with him in private that moment.

Mr. *Sugarcane* imagined that it was one of his opponents, who was coming over to him, and wanted to make terms; and therefore gave directions to have him shewn into his closet, whither he soon followed him; but what was his surprize too see that it was a friend of the minister's, whom he well knew to be in the greatest confidence with him.

As soon as the common compliments of civility were paid, "You wonder probably, Sir, (said the stranger) at this visit from me, but the motive of it will excuse the abruptness. I come to propose an accommodation between you and the minister. The necessity of affairs obliged him to treat you with an appearance of unkindness; but that is now over, and he is willing to make you amends."

"Amends, Sir! (answered Mr. *Sugarcane*, with a haughty air) I do not understand you. I have discovered the iniquity, the danger of the minister's designs and am determined to defeat them. I scorn any accommodation with the enemy of my country."

"This way of talking, Sir, (interrupted the other) may do very well amongst a crowd of drunken voters but to me it is nonsense. If you will deserve the minister's friendship, it is offered to you; if not, be not afraid of you. He is sufficiently acquainted with

the practices by which you have carried your point here ; and you know what an appearance they will have before the committee upon a petition."

The mention of a petition threw Mr. *Sugarcane* into evident confusion, as he was conscious of the illegality of his proceedings. This the gentleman instantly observed, and resolving to take the advantage of it, " My message, Sir, (said he in a peremptory tone) requires not a moment's consideration. In a word, will you, or will you not, be the minister's friend ? This is the last time you will be asked."

" On what terms ? (answered Mr. *Sugarcane* faltering, and even blushing at his own baseness)." " On the terms you have so often proposed, (replied the stranger)." " How, Sir ! I propose terms to the minister !" (interrupted *Sugarcane* with an air of surprise and disdain) I do not understand you, Sir. I would have you to know, Sir" — " Look you, Sir, (said the stranger dryly) this way of talking signifies nothing, as I have observed to you before ; nor have I much time to stay. You have solicited, frequently and earnestly solicited, for a particular place : pray, Sir, what was this but implicitly offering your services to the minister, if he would give you that place ? Now, Sir, that very place is vacant, and at your service, provided you will write the minister word, expressly and positively, to prevent mistakes, that you will support his interest, in every thing required of you, without reserve : and I would recommend it to you, to consider, whether you are like to get so much by opposing him. In the mean time, to secure your interest with your electors, he consents that you shall abuse him as much and as grossly as you please."

Mr. *Sugarcane* seemed to hesitate for a few moments, and then reaching his hand to the gentleman, " Give my compliments to our friend, (said he) and tell him he may depend upon me. I never was his enemy, farther than my interest required ; and now he has gained that to his side, he has gained me also."

He then sat down to write the letter required of him, to prevent his forgetting that he had made terms as soon as he had finished which the stranger departed to avoid suspicion, and Mr. *Sugarcane* returned to his company, where he professed patriotism, and railed at the minister with greater rage and vehemence than ever.

CHAP. X.

*The history of a cobbler, who would correct the times
The best way to win the hearts of the mob. He over-
acts his part, and is turned out as a wrangler.*

SO glaring a representation of human folly overwhelmed me with confusion. I was ashamed of participating, in a common nature, with such monster of absurdity, and turned away disgusted from the odiously ridiculous scene.

The spirit read the sentiments of my heart, and smiling with ineffable contempt, resumed his discourse in these words:

“Your vanity is offended at this story, as if it reflected any disgrace upon yourself. This is another instance of the folly of man, to think his consequences so extensive, as to be affected by any thing not immediately levelled at him. Careless of deserving praise himself, his pride is piqued at the reproof offered to others; but in this he only betrays his own infirmities. No man was ever hurt at hearing a fault reproved of which he was not guilty himself. The conscientious heart is easily alarmed. His too ready sensibility takes the imputation that was never meant, and turns general satire into particular reproach.

As for me, think not that I take pleasure in painting things worse than they really are. If the picture is disagreeable, the fault is in the original; I copy nature, and am equally above flattery and abuse. You must therefore drop this review, if you are dissatisfied with truth in its genuine colours.”

“Have

"Have compassion, gracious Spirit, (answered I, with a most respectful obeisance) on the weakness of my nature, nor impute to pride the effect of shame. I felt the force of that ridicule, to which you held up such egregious follies, and hope to receive this advantage from it, that I shall never fall into the like myself. Continue therefore the instructive picture, and your servant shall join in the honest laugh you raise, even though it be against himself."

The humility and candour of this declaration removed the Spirit's displeasure, and he proceeded.

"Nothing shews folly in a more contemptible light, (said he) than its being repeatedly duped by the same deceit. Of all the pretences which have imposed upon the credulity of mankind, this of patriotism has been oftenest used. The reason is evident; the whole system of human politics is such a medley of folly and corruption, even under the wisest administrations, that if a superior power did not constantly interpose, to disappoint the deepest designs of man, and obviate the effects of his wisdom, the very face of nature would be changed, and all her works overwhelmed in confusion and ruin.

"Observation of this uninterrupted series of errors and misfortunes, without attention to the source of them, gives weight to the clamours of every self-elected reformer, against those in power, and makes the giddy multitude listen to his specious promises of redress, as a drowning person catches even at a straw; their constant disappointments not in the least abating their credulity.

"Nor is affectation of reforming confined to the higher ranks of life, where affluence may seem to give little to idleness, and flatter ambition with a prospect of success. The meanest mechanic will undertake to mend the state; and if he can but harangue with noise and virulence, will find fools of all denominations to listen to what he says.

"An instance of this may be worth attending to; and yonder little village, at this very time, affords one of a most striking nature. Observe that man, sitting in the mimic pomp of state, and haranguing to the

gaping croud around him, with all the affected agitation and vehemence of voice and gesture of a ranting player, tearing a passion to pieces on the stage. Listen to him but a moment, and you will find him utterly ignorant of every rule of speech, as well as every principle of reasoning, continually committing blunders in each beneath a man of sense to utter, and which none but persons under the strongest degree of intoxication could hearken to, without disgust and contempt. Yet by these very harangues, frothy, extravagant, and blundering as they are, has he arisen to the state of consequence in which you now behold him.

“ He was bred a cobbler, and worked at his trade for some years in that very village with tolerable credit: but nature having unluckily given him some vivacity of parts, without any prudence to direct them, he soon grew weary of working, and spent all his time in railing at the parish-officers, and accusing them of numberless abuses in the performance of their several duties.

“ This naturally drew a crowd every market-day about his stall, to whom he set forth the public grievances in so pathetic a manner, and with such strong intimations of his own integrity and ability to redress them, if they would put the power in his hands, that they promised to chuse him churchwarden at the next vestry.

“ Intoxicated with this success, he immediately enlarged his plan, and ventured to attack the steward of the manor, for having (as he alledged) encroached upon the common, and extorted exorbitant fees in the course of his office. Nor did he shew greater respect to the lord himself, but had the assurance to charge him directly with countenancing his steward's oppressions, and designing to destroy the court-rolls and turn all the tenants out of their farms; and for fear these charges should be refuted, he involved in them every one in the parish who had an opportunity of knowing the truth, and to invalidate their testimony, and deprive them of all respect, branded them and their families with the most atrocious crimes, publishing every private calumny

ny that malice had ever invented, and raking up the ashes of the dead for scandal and defamation.

“ Such a conduct soon won the hearts of the mob, as it pulled down those above them to their own level. Accordingly he became their idol to such a degree, that they implicitly believed every word he said, and resolved unanimously to support him at the approaching vestry.

“ But he had over-acted his part, and in the warmth of his passion provoked the better part of his parishioners so much, by his personal reflections and abuse, that before he could be elected, he was presented in the court-leet as a common disturber, and condemned to be set in the stocks for a public example.

“ Though in the heat of his patriotism he had often braved danger, and boasted that he would bear any persecution, rather than desert his friends, in such a glorious cause; when it came to the test, his resolution failed him, and he manfully ran away to the county-town, where as he was out of the power of his persecutors, whose subordinate jurisdiction was confined to their own parish, and could not reach him there, he gallantly bade them defiance, and renewed his abuse, railing at them with all the rancour of impotent resentment.

C H A P. XI.

He rises in life, but cannot leave off his old tricks. A repulse overturns his patriotism, which is again renewed by another. The great advantage of a certain quality, generally decried, but as generally practised.

“ **A**S he had nothing to support him but what he earned by his trade, which he had also greatly neglected ever since he had turned reformer, to the no small embarrassment of his private affairs, he had reason to apprehend all the miseries of want, on his removal into a strange place.

" But his friends relieved him from his fears, and generously subscribed their shillings a-piece to buy him a new suit of cloaths, and set him up in a shoe-maker's shop; for he was above cobling any longer, and had been made free of the *gentle craft* for a pot of beer, and a fine speech or two, in one of the little corporation towns he passed through in his travels.

" The racket that had been made about him drew so many customers to his shop, that he was in a fair way of earning honest bread, if he could have kept himself quiet, and applied diligently to his work; but the itch of reforming had taken such fast hold of him, that he could not help meddling with other people's concerns, every where he went.

" Accordingly, in some little time after he was settled in the county-town, he took an opportunity one day, when the principal inhabitants were met together at a charity-feast, to present them with a full account of all the great things he had promised and proposed doing in his own parish, had he not unluckily been driven out of it, which he had got an attorney's clerk to write out fair for him, in a fair hand, and on gilt paper, and kindly offered his service in the same manner to them.

" But they had heard his character before; and judging that they could get nothing but trouble by admitting such a wrangler among them, prudently declined his offer, and returned him his paper.

" It must be imagined that such an indignity provoked his wrath to the highest degree; but he thought proper to suppress it, in a great measure, for fear of disobliging some of his customers: and so only expostulated mildly with them, instead of flying out into scurrility and abuse, as he had done on the former occasion.

" This rebuff damped the ardour of his public spirit so far, that there happening to be a law-suit at that time between that town and the next, about the bounds of their several commons on a barren heath, and all the inhabitants not agreeing in their opinions of the town-clerk's manner of carrying it on, and applying the revenues of the corporation, as is always

ways the case, in such affairs, he resolved to change sides, as all great men have done, and offer him that assistance which the others had before refused to take against him.

“ To this purpose he drew up a pompous epistle, which he got the schoolmaster of the town to write out fair, and correct the spelling of; and putting on his Sunday coat, went to deliver it himself, as the surest messenger: but the town clerk not being at home, he was forced to leave it with his maid, saying he would call next morning for an answer.

“ He went accordingly in the highest expectation; but you may judge what was his disappointment, when he was told that it was impossible for him to see his worship, his shoes being just then carried to the cobbler's to be mended; so that he could not come down stairs to him.

“ A wise man is never dejected at a disappointment, and often turns a misfortune to his advantage in the end. Our hero thought this an excellent opportunity for getting his worship's custom in the way of his trade; from which he promised himself more solid advantage, than any he could expect from his first scheme. As soon as he received this account, therefore, he went directly home, and prepared another epistle, in which he informed his worship, that hearing he had the misfortune the day before to have one of his shoes ript, he thought it his duty to inform him, that he had discovered a method of mending shoes that effectually secured them from such accidents ever after, which he was ready to practise upon his worship's, or even to communicate to his cobbler whenever he pleased to consult with him upon the affair. And as a proof of the excellence of this invention, he farther told him, that he had tried it with great success upon his own shoes, which had been made of such bad stuff originally, that they were bursting out every moment; so that he was generally confined two days in the week, patching them up, before he had the good fortune to make this discovery; since which they stood so well, that he did not fear but they would last out their time with satisfaction:

on: and lastly, to enhance the value of this offer, he added in a postscript, that he was the cöbler who had been driven out of such a village, by the malice of a parcel of scoundrels, and now kept a shoemaker's shop in that town, where he did not doubt but his talent of speaking would be as serviceable to his worship, by bringing over the mob to his side, as it had been terrible to the others.

" This letter also he carried himself, as he had done the former; and to encourage the maid to deliver it carefully to her master, gave her a pinch of snuff out of his own box, telling her, as before, that he would call again for an answer.

" But cunningly as this scheme was laid, the success fell quite short of his expectation; for the next time he called, the maid returned him both his letters, telling him that her master thanked him for his kind offers, but had no occasion for them at that time; and was beside so very busy just then, that he could not have the pleasure of taking a cup of ale with him; but should be glad of his company some other day.

" It is impossible to express the rage into which this affronting repulse threw him. He returned directly to his former principles of patriotism, and railed at the town-clerk with as much virulence as the most interested of his enemies.

" Though modesty is a virtue praised by every body, the quality directly opposite to it is much oftner successful in the world. This was exactly the case with this person. There was nothing, however desperate in the way of his trade, that he would not undertake and promise to perform with the greatest confidence, not in the least discouraged or abashed by the many miscarriages he met with. It must be acknowledged, at the same time, that by thus indiscriminately undertaking every thing, he sometimes happened to cobble up a breach, which much abler hands would never have attempted.

" But this was far from proving his having any real merit, any superior skill in his trade, or recommending him to the custom of persons of prudence and consideration; as among such a number of attempts

It was next to impossible but some should succeed. However, he plumed himself upon every accidental instance of success, as if he was the only one who understood any thing of his business; and though he was no better than an interloper, as one may say, himself, and had never served a regular apprenticeship to the trade, he treated all his brethren with the utmost contempt and abuse, calling them ignorant pretenders, and blundering fools, who knew nothing of the business they professed.

“Though this conduct naturally disgusted every person of sense, the unthinking shallow crowd was pleased with it; and taking his abuse of the rest of the craft, for a proof of his own superior skill, so many of them brought their shoes to his shop to be mended that he made a shift to live tolerably well; which was more than he could have expected, had he modestly waited to be recommended by his merit, and not proclaimed his own praises in this manner.”

C H A P. XII.

Luck is all. He returns home, and triumphs over his enemies. Great discoveries in philosophy. His story concluded, and himself left in a fog.

“IT is an old observation, that one lucky hit, no matter how accidental or improbable, oftner makes a man’s fortune, than the best concerted scheme or greatest merit. Of this the hero of our tale had the happiness to be a most signal instance.

“One of the principal gentlemen of his own village happening to tear his shoe quite across one day when he was a great way from home, sent for several of the most eminent cobblers and shoe-makers of the place to try to have it mended; but after many unsuccessful attempts, they all pronounced it beyond the reach of their art, to make it ever do again.

“As it was quite a new shoe, this gave the gentleman a good deal of vexation, and coming to the town, where this person lived in his way home, he was prevailed

vailed upon him to apply to him. Though his former knowledge of him gave him but a mean opinion of his skill, as the case was desperate, he thought it no great matter to try what he could do ; accordingly he sent for him, who no sooner saw the shoe, and heard in what manner the others had attempted to mend it, than he at once pronounced them botchers in his usual stile, and, without the least hesitation, undertook to set it to rights ; which he had the good look to do so effectually, that the gentleman not only gave him half a crown for his trouble (which, by the bye, many thought to be more than the shoe was worth the first day) but also recommended him to all his acquaintances, so that he had as much business as he could possibly do.

“ Could he have been contented, he was now in a fair way of doing very well ; but the old lord of the manor where he had formerly lived happening to die, he prevailed upon this gentleman to use his interest with the heir to have the presentment of the court-leet withdrawn, and on obtaining his request, left the business of his shop, and went back to his old trade of haranguing the mob, which he did so successfully, that at the next vestry they bore down the gentry by their numbers, and chose him church-warden, in spite of all opposition.

“ In this situation you behold him at present, boasting to his insatuated followers what great things he designs to do, for the good of the parish. But all this ease and confidence in his words and looks are nothing but affectation and grimace. He is sensible how his having obtained the immediate object of his ambition, has given him time to think, that he has climbed to the highest pinnacle of his popularity, from whence he must inevitably fall ; as it is absolutely out of his power to perform the least part of his fine promises to his deluded party, who will therefore hate and despise him as vehemently as they admired him before, the moment they find their disappointment.

“ Much as a conscious apprehension of this allays the pleasure of his present success, there is another reflection which comes nearer to his heart, and fills him with fears of a still severer nature,

“ Though

“ Though the business of his shop, after that lucky accident of setting the gentleman's shoe to rights, was much more profitable to him than he had any reason to have expected, the natural restlessness and vanity of his temper prevented his making the proper advantage of his good fortune, and providing for a reverse, by prudent æconomy ; so that all the horrors of want already begin to stare him in the face, as he can never expect the same success where he is at present, the better sort of people having, most of them, taken just offence at the insolence of his present behaviour, as well as his former abuse, and having besides no opinion of his skill in his trade ; and his own party being too poor to afford him any profit by their custom.

“ Nor is this all. Provoked at the self-sufficiency and arrogance with which he affects to look down upon all his brethren of the craft, the worshipful company in the village where he now lives have unanimously entered into a resolution never to consult with him, on any of the affairs of their business, such as fixing the price of leather and hogs bristles, and many other things of equal importance, without he will submit to be examined in the terms of their mystery, which would not be likely to prove much to his credit, as he never served an apprenticeship to the business to learn them as they did ; so that he will be left to trade entirely upon his own judgment, which, beside the hazard and discredit of it, will also lose him many a good job, as there are several people so fond of acting with due deliberation, that they will not have a crack in an old shoe cobbled without summoning half a dozen of the most eminent of the craft, to consult upon the matter.

“ His freedom of the trade in general they do not deny, but, by a bye law of their own corporation, they have this power of refusing to confer with him, which they are determined to exert.

“ It may be thought that their acting in this manner betrays a prejudice beneath such a grave and reputable society ; but the truth is, they have abundant reason to justify their proceedings.

“ To gain a reputation on his first setting up the shoe-making trade, he had ventured hap-hazard to assert

fert many things which were contrary to the common practice of his brethren, and reflected great dishonour on them, for having followed such absurd opinions so long.

"The principal of those, and that which he laid the greatest stress upon, was a new discovery he pretended to have made of *the cause of some particular water's tanning asses hides better than others*. The fact had long been known to the whole craft, who managed their business accordingly, and sent their wares to those places satisfied with the effect, without giving themselves the trouble of enquiring into the cause.

"But he looked upon this as beneath his sagacity. He wrote a book, in which he demonstrated, by many learned arguments and curious experiments, that *water was water, and not fire*; and to give the greater weight to this important discovery, he made a parade of going to all the tanners yards about the country, where he raked in the mud and filth of the common shores, till he was almost suffocated by the stench; and then proved to the entire satisfaction of the ignorant crowd that stood gaping at him, *that the scum which stuck to the sides of the shores was no longer floating in the water*, and branded all his brethren of the craft with the familiar titles of *fools* and *blockheads*, for not having found out this important secret before.

"Such an opinion was beneath an answer. But though his brethren did not think it worth their while to enter into a dispute about nothing with one who gave positive assertions for proofs, and answered rational arguments with personal reflections, they resolved to take the first fair opportunity of humbling his pride, and shewing the world their contempt of him; which they have now done in a manner that he will not easily get over.

"You see what a poor prospect he has of business in his trade, insufficient to support him in the state he assumes; but this is not his only distress. *The common motive of patriotism is the price for which a man can sell himself and his party*, to the lord or steward of the manor, whom he was raised on purpose to oppose. This price is always in proportion to the opposition which it is in the patriot's power to give.

"But

"But unluckily for this person, his whole consequence depends upon the actual exertion of that opposition, and must inevitably cease the moment he attempts to drop it. This the steward knows as well as himself; so that his hopes from that quarter are effectually cut off, should his poverty prompt him to make the base attempt."

C H A P. XIII.

An odd way of expressing favour or dislike. The history of THE COBLER matched by that of a CRIER.

"I SHOULD imagine (said I, perceiving that my guide had finished his account of the cobbler) that he has something to fear more immediately than want, which in a great measure obviates the danger of that.

"You say his deluded party will despise him. Will they not do more? Will they not be provoked by such egregious abuse, to take personal revenge? To pull down his house over his head, and bury him in the ruins? or tear him limb from limb, the first time they catch him in the streets? The mob is capable of any outrage; and here they have an appearance of reason to justify whatever they do.

"I think his case is really desperate, and that the only hope he can have of escaping is to fly once more to the county town; and follow his trade. His ambition must be pretty well cooled by this time; and therefore he will be able to apply diligently to his work, and may possibly earn an honest and comfortable livelihood."

"To unexperienced reason (answered the spirit) your remark appears just. But better knowledge of the ways of man shews that such fear is quite unnecessary. Did the people express their resentment in the manner you mention, it is most certain that they would not be so often abused as they are by pretended patriots. An example or two of the kind would effectually put a stop to that trade, how lucrative soever it is, which would

would be a real advantage to the community in general. But the remedy might be attended with consequences more dangerous than the disease. Would the mob, if once permitted to take the power thus into their own hands, never rise but on such occasions? Would they lay it down when their end is answered, and go no farther? Would not the best members of the state be involved in the same danger, on every miscarriage in their measures, though impossible to have been prevented by human means. The mob is a many headed monster, that must be kept in subjection, or it will become the most insupportable of all tyrants. It knows no mean, and therefore must not be trusted with power.

" But as to these people, they have been so often imposed upon in this matter before, that the abuse is become familiar to them, and they will not even feel it after the first moment, and then too their resentment will spend itself in scurrility and invectives, levelled offener against faults in the person's private character, than his abuse of them.

" Indeed nothing can be more ridiculous than the manner in which they express their sentiments on such occasions. *While a man is their favourite, they are continually getting drunk with drinking his health; when he is out of favour with them they get drunk with drinking his confusion;* a bumper toast in either case being the highest, and often the only mark of their approbation or dislike.

" Nay, so far are they from harbouring a dangerous resentment, even for the grossest ill usage of this kind, that if the party has procured money enough to give them plenty of drink by the very sale of themselves, they forget all that has happened, and flock to him, with as much pleasure as if he were their greatest benefactor.

" Strange as this conduct may appear, every day's experience furnishes instances of it; but of the many which mark the character of the present age, the most glaring is that of the person whom you see in yonder closet, spurning the ensigns of grandeur from him, with an air of satisfaction, that shews their insufficiency to

procure

procure their own happiness. His whole life is so strong a satire on this particular folly of patriotism, that a short view of it cannot be improper.

He was born in this manor, where his ancestors who were but peasants, acquired so considerable a property by their honest industry, as enabled them to make a better appearance than many of the gentry.

When he came into possession of his fortune, he lived in so hospitable and genteel a manner, that he was greatly liked by his neighbours of all ranks, who never suspected that his generosity was ultimately subservient to the most enterprising ambition; but a lucky event secured his hopes before they discovered, and could take any measure to defeat them.

There happened to be at that time a vagabond fellow in the next county, who pretended a claim to the lord of this manor's whole estate, which he talked of going to law to recover, as soon as he could raise money to support the suit, for he was himself very poor, and lived upon the charity of one or two great folks, who maintained him rather to plague the lord, than from any personal regard to himself, or opinion of the justice of his claim.

The lord was convinced of his own right, and very well able to support it. However, to prevent trouble, he gave notice to all his tenants not to give his adversary any assistance, on pain of forfeiting their leases, in which there was a clause expressly to that purpose.

But this did not hinder some desperate fellows, who had run out their fortunes in whoring and gaming, or were upon their keeping for deer-stealing, and such illegal practices, from joining with him under-hand, in hopes that if he should recover the estate, he might be easily prevailed upon, in return for their services, not only to forgive their offences, but also to reinstate them in their farms, or grant them leases of those which belonged to the friends of his opponent.

Such a combination naturally alarmed all those who were in the interest of the present lord, especially as it was headed by a very bold spirited turbulent fellow, one of the principal gentry of the parish, who had

just

just before ran away with the wife of one of his neighbours ; and therefore though he bullied the husband to compliance, could not expect to live in quiet under a landlord who was remarkably strict in the execution of the laws.

“ This was a fair opportunity for one of such an enterprising spirit as this person before us, to ingratiate himself effectually with the lord of the manor. No did he fail to improve it ; for putting himself at the head of his family, and all those whom his hospitality had attached to him, he drove that gentleman, great bully as he was, quite out of the parish.

“ So signal a piece of service did not remain long unrewarded. The *CRIER of the court-leet* happened to die just then, he was unanimously chosen into his place the next court-day ; and the lord thought him firm in his interest, that he not only approved of his tenants choice, but also made him *CLERK of his own kitchen* the very next vacancy.

“ In this situation of crier he conducted himself with such address, that he was able to put only those he pleased on the grand-jury, and by that means frequently to oppose the steward himself in things which he knew to be disagreeable to the parish : at the same time managing matters so artfully, that he never absolutely broke with him, nor gave him reason sufficient to turn him out of his clerkship ; having always some plausible excuse to palliate what he did, and professing the highest fidelity and attachment to the lord's service, which he took every occasion of promoting, that he thought would not injure him, in the opinion of the people.

“ The popularity and power which he acquired by this conduct was far from being agreeable to many of his neighbours, particularly of the better sort, who did not like to see a man whom they looked upon as their inferior rise over their heads in such a manner, that they were become no better than mere cyphers in the parish, not being able to make a petty constable, or get a presentment for mending a road, or even making a stile, without being first obliged to cringe to him for his consent.

CHAP. XIV.

See one knave to catch another. An instance of moderation as much out of course as in character. The parson swallows a sugar-pumb, and does what he is bid like a good child.

“**A**T length one of the gentry, a cunning old fellow, who knew the world and all its ways well, resolved to try if he could not supplant him in the favour of the people, by making him appear a favourite of the lord’s ; after which he knew it would not be difficult to do his business with him also, who was already far from being well pleased with his conduct.

“ Accordingly he employed emissaries to insinuate to the parishioners, when their heads were hot with liquor at fairs and wakes, that it was imprudent in them to put themselves so much in the power of a person who held so profitable a place under the lord of the manor, as clerk of the kitchen, as he would not fail to give up their interest, on any great occasion, for fear of being turned out of his employment.

“ These insinuations soon came to the crier’s ears, who, without waiting to let the people ruminate upon the matter, went among them directly, as if he knew nothing of what had passed ; and took occasion to tell them in the course of his conversation, that he had accepted of the clerkship, only that he might be able to serve them more effectually, by taking care that the provisions, which they were obliged by their tenures to supply for the support of the lord’s house, were not embezzled privately by the servants, and they put to the expence of more ; and, as a proof of the advantage of this care, he assured them, that many a time, when the lord had given some of his hungry followers a letter to him, to get a basket of broken victuals, he had returned for answer, that there was scarce enough for the family, and so sent the beggars away with empty bellies.

“ This artful turn gave the affair quite another look. They implicitly believed every word he said ; so that he foiled

foiled his enemy, cunning as he was, at his own weapons, and made the attack, designed to have over-
turned him, serve to establish his interest more firmly.

“ But this disappointment did not discourage the other, who now had new motives for striving to get him out of favour; for having married two of his sons to the steward’s daughters, he judged that if he could contrive to have the crier turned out, it would not be difficult to get the younger, who was a fine promising lad, and fond of living at home among his friends chosen in his stead; by which means the management of the whole manor would come into the hands of his family, several of his relations, who all depended upon him, having good employments under the steward already ready.

“ But how to effect this was the question; for the crier’s popularity seemed so firmly established, that it appeared dangerous even to attempt any thing against him. After much deliberation, he resolved, as the method most likely to succeed, to set up a rival against him for the people’s favour; and then he did not doubt, but their own fickleness would soon make them quit their old engagements and readily enter into new.

“ Nor was he long at a loss whom to fix upon as most proper for his design. The old parson of the parish dying suddenly one day just after eating an hearty dinner of pork and pease-pudding, the lord gave the living to a young man who had lately come into the parish with the steward.

“ A particular circumstance made his choice very disagreeable to many of the principal parishioners. The greatest part of the income of the living consisted in the rents of a large quantity of glebe land, which was let out in parcels to several people for a certain number of years.

“ The leases, by which these farms were held, were never suffered to run out; for as the parson were only tenants for life, they had no great regard to their successors; and had therefore come into a method of renewing the leases at particular times, in

consideration

consideration of a stated sum of money, which was clear gain to them. By these means the tenants looked upon the lands as their own inheritance ; and had built houses and settled themselves upon them accordingly.

But the late parson, thinking they had too great bargains, refused to renew their leases at the usual time, unless they would give him much higher fines than they had ever given to any of his predecessors ; which they resolved not to do, imagining that as he was very old as well as very avaritious, the fear of dying without getting any thing would make him abate of his demand.

In this manner things stood for some years, neither party chusing to comply, when the death of the old parson, and his being succeeded by one whose youth gave him a reasonable expectation of seeing their leases determined, when it would be in his power either to turn them out, or raise their rents to the full value, alarmed them all in the highest degree.

To prevent such a misfortune, therefore, they directly agreed to offer their new parson the sum which had been demanded by his predecessor, and which they had always so positively refused to give him. But what was their astonishment when, instead of accepting their offer, he coolly told them, he thought the income of the living, as settled by the incumbent immediately before the last, was sufficient, wherefore he desired no more ; and prayed to God to enable him to make as good use of that as he had done.

Such an act of true generosity, not only won the hearts of those who reaped the benefit of it, but also gained him the general esteem of the whole parish ; especially as he lived entirely amongst them, and spent his income in the most unbounded hospitality ; not hoarding it up, or laying it out in other places, as most of his predecessors had been accustomed to do.

On him the crier's enemy pitched, as a proper person to rival him in the favour of the people ; accordingly, having gained his good opinion by going constantly to church, and behaving there with a great appearance of devotion, he took an opportunity one day to insinuate

nuate to him, that he ought to exert himself more than he did in the affairs of the parish, and not tamely submit to the usurpations of the crier, who was for ever grossing all the power into his own hands, without ever regarding whose right he invaded.

"These insinuations were not without effect. The parson's heart, though above avarice, was not insensible to ambition. He readily took the bait; and as he was quite unexperienced in such affairs, submitted himself implicitly to the government of his adviser, while he pretended to have nothing but to restore him to the consequence due to his station and virtues, in view, really made a property of him to promote his own schemes.

CH A P. XV.

A game of football. A false step gives the crier the better of the match. He kicks the ball in his master's face but makes all up, and comes off with flying colours.

"THE regard with which the parson began to be spoken of by the whole parish soon gave the crier the alarm; which was confirmed by his opposition to him in two or three trifling things in the vestry, which his opinion was received with such deference that it was probable he would have risen fairly above him in a little time, had not fortune, the crier's constant friend, stood by him effectually on this occasion.

"A friend of the parson's had been appointed the steward to repair and set up a parcel of fence-crows, to frighten their neighbours cattle from trespassing on their common; for which purpose, the court-leet had ordered him a sum of money out of the parish stock.

"Such commissions had usually been given as a plausible colour for bestowing so much money, without any design of their being executed. In this sense, did the parson understand his; and accordingly gave himself no trouble about the performance of it.

"T

"The crier, who had connived at many things of the kind before, immediately took fire at this, and resolved to prosecute the man for embezzling the money of the parish.

"For this he had many reasons: he knew that an action, which had such an appearance of public spirit and justice, would greatly repair his credit with the people, which he could not but be sensible was on the decline; and then, as the parson's intimacy with the delinquent would probably make him take his part, he thought that would be a favourable opportunity for giving a check to his growing popularity.

"Nor was he mistaken in his conjectures. The parson in the warmth of his heart, not only espoused his friend himself, but also engaged all his party to support him, without ever considering that appearances were so strongly against him, that every one who was not in the secret of such affairs, must harbour a disadvantageous opinion of himself for abetting such an action.

"Accordingly the next court-day the crier made his attack, and displayed the heinousness of such a flagrant act of injustice to the public in so strong a light, that the mob, who never examine more than one side of a story, were all of his party; so that the parson was not only foiled in his attempt to save his friend, but also entirely lost his credit with the people, who, in the phrenzy of their resentment, loaded him with every scandal and execration, which the most venomous malice could invent.

"This affair effectually restored the crier's credit; but though he had succeeded in this first object of his design, it was attended with consequences he had not foreseen, and which were far from being agreeable to him.

"The steward, who had appointed the parson's friend to the employment which had involved him in this disgrace, thought it incumbent upon him to support him in conjunction with the parson; and when the crier had carried his point against them both, represented the affair to the lord of the manor, as an insult

insult upon his authority, and a certain mark of distinction to his interest.

“ The crier, who meant nothing less than to have embroiled himself with the lord, or even with the steward, was surprised at this charge. However, he had gone too far to think of retreating now; and therefore resolved to oppose their measures in good earnest the first time they seemed to clash with the rights or interest of the people, which he knew to be the certain way to secure his party to him, as it would make them all as desperate as himself.

“ This he did not long want an opportunity of doing. There had been a sum of money raised by the court-leet some time before, to defray the charge of repairing the manor-house, of which there remained a good part unexpended, there having been more levied than was necessary for the occasion.

“ As it had been the custom of this manor to give money to the lord himself on these occasions to lay out as he thought proper, he had always appropriated the surplus that remained to his own use, without thinking himself accountable to the court-leet for it: but now the crier, who, by his place of clerk of the kitchen had an opportunity of looking into all the lord's accounts, finding that the sum was pretty considerable, proposed to the court-leet to lay it out, in discharging the bills of some poor tradesmen which had been left unpaid on a former occasion, and to whom the whole manor had passed their words; and to this effect he drew up an address to the lord.

“ Though this was a direct attack upon the lord, and in a most tender point, there was something plausible in the proposal, that he did not chuse absolutely to reject it. However, not to give up so much, or establish a precedent for such attempts in the future, he gave general orders to the court-leet to pay off those tradesmen with that money as of their own free motion, and without taking any notice of the application, which it had made to him to that purpose.

“ But the crier, perceiving the design of this proceeding, refused to accept those orders, and insisted

absolute

absolutely on having the authority of the court-leet to dispose of the money allowed, in which his old support, the mob, followed his opinion so firmly, that the orders were rejected in spite of all the parson and steward both could do to prevent it.

Such a triumph filled the mob with the most extravagant joy. They extolled the crier to the skies for his public spirit and fidelity to their interest; and were drunk for a whole week with drinking bumpers to his health, while they offered every kind of insult to his opponents, particularly the parson, and branded them with the most infamous and improbable crimes.

But though the lord had not been able to make them receive his orders with due respect, he resolved to shew them, that he would have them obeyed without regard to their opposition.

Accordingly, he ordered his receiver to pay the money in dispute to those people, and take their receipts for it, of his own mere authority, without desisting to consult the court-leet any more about the matter; and, to shew his resentment to the crier, turned him directly out of his clerkship, as he did all his friends out of the several employments they had in the manor under his steward, giving them to the friends of the parson, and of the gentleman who first stirred him up against the crier.

The latter was now at the highest pinnacle of popular glory; the idol of the mob, and the apparent victim of the perfidy and oppression of his enemies.

But he knew the world too well to be content with such an unsubstantial phantom as the favour of a mob. He had laboured all his life, it was true, with indefatigable assiduity to arrive at this point; but he soon shewed he had other views than those he pretended; and that all his professions of regard and attachment to the good of the parish, were only lures to draw in the giddy multitude to trust themselves so implicitly in his power, that he might be able to get the price he deserved for betraying them when he saw a proper time.

Accordingly, upon some hints of his intentions, the lord sent a new steward to take care of the estate,

the former one having been made disagreeable to the tenants by the violence and over-bearing of some of his servants, who had not spirit to support what they said, when they were called to account for it, though he was himself a good-natured easy kind of man in the main, and had formerly been very well liked by them.

“ The new steward and the crier soon came to a proper understanding over an hearty bottle, of which they were both remarkably fond ; and the latter bargained to sell his friends, and resign his crier’s place, in consideration of being made an esquire, and getting a salary to support him suitably to his new dignity.

“ It is impossible to express the rage of the mob, at seeing they had been so long the dupes of his designs. They got drunk for a week together with drinking to his confusion, made scurrilous ballads against him and his family, and loaded him, in his turn, with execrations and abuse.

“ But a new patriot standing forth to engage their attention, they forgot the crier, and went on in their old way with as much eagerness and credulity, as they had never been deceived.

“ As for the parson, his polite friend served him nearly in the same manner as the crier did the mob. As soon as his turn was served, and his son chosen in to the crier’s place, chiefly by the assistance of the parson’s friends, he not only dropped his acquaintance but even gave him up to the crier’s resentment ; who had privately made it a part of his bargain that he should be struck out of the *quorum*, in revenge for the trouble and expence he had put him to in the course of this affair.

“ As the old crier has been so successful in all his schemes, I see you wonder how he came into this place but if you consider that vanity and an absurd ambition of being made a gentleman, were the originals, the leading motives of all his labours, you will acknowledge that the egregious folly of the end, takes off all merit from the means, and makes his success ridiculous.

“ Nor is he insensible of this himself now that it is too late. Though the unthinking mean spirited man

have f
to ea
ne an
re ha
reproa
their co
ne feor
unhappy
late th

Muzzle
chara
full-tu

I W A
lic sp
solved to
something
tical be
“ Eno
hast thou
every ran
fame effe
on surely
he great
must be e
jects u
own to t
willers.

of drunke
worthy of
I will
will and lit
is ever
it me
to ou

have forgot his abuse of them, and crowd to his table to eat his meat and drink his wine, with as much readiness and pleasure as if their own and their family's interests had not been sold by him to purchase them; the reproaches of his own heart embitter his enjoyment of their company, and make their professions of respect nauseous. He pines for his former popularity; and, unhappy in the accomplishment of his hopes, finds too late, that the end of all his labours is vanity."

CHAP. XVI.

Muzzle a bear, or he'll bite you. Three remarkable characters. Boys that play tricks should beware of tall-tales.

I WAS, by this time so sick of patriotism and public spirit, that, as soon as my guide stopped, I resolved to beg that he would change the subject, to something more deserving of the observation of a rational being.

"Enough, most judicious spirit! (said I) enough hast thou said to prove the justice of thy remark. In every rank of life, I see the same causes produce the same effects. Cobblers and criers differ but in name: but surely it must be otherwise in higher scenes, where the great affairs of nations are transacted. The mind must be extended in proportion to the greatness of the subjects upon which it is employed, and can never look down to the trifles which engross the attention of paltry villagers. Let us therefore turn away from this scene of drunkenness and folly, and seek for matter more worthy of our observation elsewhere.

"I will indulge you (answered my guide); but you will find little advantage in the change of place. Folly is every where alike, and more exalted stations only make it more ridiculous: and luckily a scene presents itself to our view, which shews this in the most striking

" Turn your eye this way. — You see those three persons yonder. They are just entering into a conference upon one of the most extraordinary subjects that ever shewed the inconsistency of human actions. You will hear it from themselves; but first, while they make the common preface of empty compliments, and ask meaning questions, which are made the introduction to conversation even on the most important subjects, I will give you a short sketch of their lives as far as is necessary to make you understand what they say.

" They were born in different manors belonging to the lord who owns that in which the crier made such a figure; but their being educated together at the same free school, gave rise to an intimacy which has grown up with them through life.

" When they were taken from school they were put to different professions, as interest or inclination directed. He on the right chose the law, in which the acuteness of his genius enabled him to make such a proficiency, that in time he was entrusted to search for informations against such persons as trespassed on the lord's demesne, or killed his game, and to sue the tenants who did not pay their rents punctually.

" This employment was not only very profitable to himself, but also gave him an appearance of so great consequence in the court-leet, that he was generally on one side or the other in every private dispute that arose in the manor.

" The next, as you see by his habit, was bred to the church, in which he laboured so successfully, that he got a good vicarage before he was very old, and having the character of being a great scholar, was preferred to the honourable employment of teaching the lord of the manor's son and heir his letters.

" As for the third, he was too idle to take to any particular profession: but by the interest of his friends he got into the steward's office, where he had several pretty employments, which brought him in a good penny in the whole.

" But this was not all. Having always shewn a remarkable turn for making bawbles and nick-nacks,

being a perfect master of the punctilios of dress and address, and all the other accomplishments of a small genius, he was chosen as a proper person to provide rattles and paper-kites for his young master, and to teach him to cock his hat, and ride his hobby horse with a good grace.

“As they were all known to be very well qualified for these important places, there was no objection made to their being honoured with them, and they executed their several charges with proper dignity and care. But an unlucky affair soon happened, that threatened not only the loss of their present employments, but also to prevent their being ever entrusted with any other.

“You may remember I told you there was a fellow who pretended a right to all the estates of this lord. His family came originally from the manor in which the lawyer was born, and where most of the inhabitants had a strong attachment to him, both as they were naturally very proud, and thought it would be a great honour to them to have their townsman made lord of the manor, and also that they flattered themselves with the hopes of getting good farms from him, in some of his other manors, in case he could make good his pretensions; for they were all as poor as they were proud.

“Beside, there was another reason for their desiring to change their landlord. Before the estate came into the possession of the present lord, they had been accustomed to have their landlord live among them, and hold his courts and receive suit and service in this manor. But this lord, having many better houses to live in, had removed his habitation, and of course discontinued those ceremonies; so that they lost all that parade of grandeur in which their pride had taken such pleasure.

“Now as this fellow founded his pretensions on being descended from the family of their old lords, they expected that he would come and live among them, as they had done; or at least restore them their courts, and all their ceremonies and perquisites again,

never considering that the employments and places of honour and profit, which they held in the other estates of the present lord, yielded them more than the entire income of their manor.

"It is not strange, therefore, that the lawyer should have received an early bias in his favour; which was also confirmed by his being educated at that free school, the master and ushers of which were all notorious for the same principles, and took all possible pains to instil them into their pupils, in which they were not unsuccessful, with the lawyer's two friends as well as with many others.

"It happened in some little time after they were preferred to those employments above-mentioned, that a person who had formerly been very intimate with them all three, having been educated at the same school along with them, said, among a mixt company in the unguarded openness of conversation, when we removes all reserve, that he had once little thought of their being ever put into places of such confidence under the lord of the manor, as he had often seen them, on their bare knees, drink confusion to him and all his friends, and success to the hopes of his enemies.

"There was something so singular in this speech that it struck all the company with surprize; but one gentleman in particular, who was warmly attached to the lord's interest, desired all present to take notice of what this person had said, as he was resolved to put him to the proof of it, it being as base in him to throw those aspersions on the characters of persons on such note, if they were innocent, as it would be criminal in all who heard him to conceal an affair of such consequence, in case they were guilty.

"Thunder-struck at this, the other, who had no intention of turning informer against his friends, and had only said it in the course of general chat, strove to evade the subject, and give the discourse some other turn, hoping that the gentleman would think no more of it; but finding that he would not be put off so, he persisted in his resolution, he appealed to the sanctity of private conversation, where all that was said had

ever been held sacred, and the disclosing of a syllable accounted a breach of the laws of society, and that mutual confidence which alone makes it a blessing.

“ To this the gentleman answered, that he was neither ignorant of, nor designed to infringe upon, these laws; but that here a superior duty intervened and superseded them; nothing private being to be put in competition with the welfare of the public, which he thought to be concerned in this affair.

C H A P. XVII.

A bad excuse is better than none. The advantages of a friend in court. A maxim in law solves all.

ACCORDINGLY he went the very next morning and informed the lord of the whole matter, who called all his principal servants together, to consult what was proper to be done in this case; for as it concerned his own family particularly, he would not act without advice, that he should not be suspected of partiality; who all agreed that it ought to be enquired into with the greatest strictness.

“ On this, the person who had undesignedly given the information was brought before them, when he gave such a vague account of the affair, that the lawyer, who was appointed by the other two to speak for them all, as best qualified by his profession to defend a bad cause, thought it the best way not to deny the charge directly, but to strive to turn it off, by saying it was not impossible but they might have played such foolish tricks, when they were boys at school; but that the conduct of his whole life ever since he came to man's estate, was a sufficient proof of the sincerity of his attachment to his lord; and to confirm this, he instanced his having prosecuted, with the greatest vigour, several of the parish in which he was born, and even some of his own family, for this very offence with which he was now so absurdly charged, since he came into his present employment.

" Plausible as this defence was, the gentleman judged from the manner in which the story had been originally told, that there must be more in it; he therefore insisted that the person who had told it should declare positively, and without prevarication or reserve, whether he had ever known them drink those toasts since they left school? where? and on what occasions?

" These questions were too close to be evaded. He was therefore obliged, in defence of his own character, which was now at stake, to declare the whole; accordingly he said that he had heard them drink them several times at the house of an haberdasher of small wares, who kept a shop in the county-town, where for many years they used to meet constantly twice or thrice a week, and indulge themselves in the most sanguine professions of those principles over their wine; who was so strongly attached to that person himself, and so well persuaded of their attachment to him also, that when he came to die, he bequeathed his real estate, which was very considerable, to the lawyer, with handsome legacies to the other two, leaving him (the informer) but a meer trifle, as he doubted his being staunch to the cause; and, as a confirmation of what he said, added, that the settlement which the lawyer had since made upon his wife at his marriage was of that very estate which the haberdasher had left him.

" This gave a different face to the whole affair. The lawyer in particular gave himself up for ruined, and would gladly have compounded for the loss, not only of his present employment, but also of all farther hopes.

" But he had better luck. The majority of the servants, who had been called into consultation upon the affair, did not think it prudent to establish a precedent for looking so far back; and one of them particularly, who had been bred to the law himself, said, " That this estate should be considered as a fee, given by the haberdasher to his lawyer, and that it was an established rule that a lawyer should say any thing that his client desired for his fee, without being called in question for it; for if it were otherwise, and lawyers made answerable for what they said, there would be an end to the business at once.

as the great art and mystery of it consisted in saying any thing that might any way conduce to carrying the point, without regard to decency, truth, or any such immaterial considerations : whereas if gentlemen of the law were to be called to account for what they said in the way of their business, and for their fee, no one would ever undertake a weak cause, and so the profession would fall to the ground. Beside, it was a point agreed upon, in all the books, that what a lawyer says for his fee, is never to be considered as his private sentiment or opinion ; else how could lawyers rail at, and abuse their most intimate friends, in the manner they do every day, for a stranger they know nothing of, and in a cause they are convinced to be wrong, without breaking with them, or giving them the least offence ; as an instance of which, he added that he had himself often gone directly from court to dine with the man whom he had spent the whole morning in abusing ; therefore, no man was to be called to account for what he said for his fee : and this opinion he supported by a string of quotations from all the grave and learned sages of the law ; and by the constant and uniform practice of the profession from time immemorial to this very day."

" So learned a defence saved the delinquents ; for it would have been unjust to have made a distinction between them. The majority of the servants (as I said) therefore gave it as their opinion, that the accusation, *though not false*, was malicious, frivolous, and unworthy of farther notice.

" Thus blew over a storm, in which their very friends expected they would have sunk. On the contrary, the lawyer was soon after made a justice of the peace and deputy to the seneschal of the principal manor ; the parson got a better living ; and the hobby-horse-man, on his pupil's growing too big for his care, was preferred by his best friend the steward to be his head clerk, which places they all enjoy at present ; while the poor informer drew upon himself such universal contempt for his indiscretion, that he was never able to shew his face after."

CHAP. XVIII.

*Modern modesty and gratitude. Comparisons are odious.
A good memory often makes a bad companion. It is
prudent to make hay while the sun shines.*

“ I T might be imagined that after such an affair their present preferment should satisfy their ambition. But far from it, emboldened by that escape, they think there is nothing which they may not do; and the favour that has been shewn them since, instead of making them contented and grateful, has given them such an high opinion of their own merit, which they modestly judge to have been the reason for it, that they reckon all they have got as nothing while there is any thing else for them to desire; and look upon themselves as ill-treated, if they are refused whatever they please to ask. — But soft! — Their conference at length begins. — Let us attend. —

“ I say, sir, (said the lawyer, fire sparkling in his eyes) that I am ill-used. Had there been any objection to my abilities to fill such an employment, or could it have been even pretended that the person who is put over my head, was superior to me in any respect, it would have been another case; but to be continued a deputy, where I had so good a right to be made principal, is not to be borne. Nor will I bear it. No man provokes me with impunity. —”

“ Really, sir, (answered the parson) I cannot but own you have some reason to complain. But what would you say, if you were in my place? To be taken no notice of where there were so many opportunities! so many better livings vacant! it is enough to provoke the patience of *Job*. After all the pains I have taken to teach him to read, and my care in chusing out such lessons as were proper for him, that he might not receive wrong notions of things, to be slighted in this manner; it is too much! He could not have served his former tutor worse, who was turned off for teaching him to spell in that profane ballad. But there is no such thing as gratitude, no regard to past services, to be found in this world!

“ Indeed

"Indeed, gentlemen (added the third, while his reverence stopped to take a pinch of snuff, and the lawyer was walking about the room in a violent chase) we are all extremely ill-used. But you must both allow, that I have much the greatest reason to complain. You have got places which afford you a comfortable subsistence, and if they are not quite so good as you could wish, you have this satisfaction, that they cannot be taken from you.

"But this is not my case. I may be turned out of the poor pittance I have got, without a moment's warning, as it is most probable I shall soon find to my sorrow, whenever the old steward dies. And this is all the reward I have received for the many weary hours I have spent at chuck and push-pin with the young heir, and teaching him to buckle his shoes right, and put on his hat with an air. We have all reason to complain; but my case is certainly the hardest."

"Your case, (replied the lawyer, with a smile of indignant contempt) pray, what is your case, good sir? The paltry menial services you did about his person have been sufficiently rewarded. Common servants should not assume such airs, nor pretend to put themselves on a level with their superiors." —

"Paltry menial services! (interrupted the other, kindling into a rage) I'd have you to know, sir, that my services were not paltry; and perhaps they give me a better right to expect favour than any which some others can boast of, highly as they may think of themselves. But I should be glad to know in what your great merit has consisted, that you are so ready to call that of another in question."

"My merit, sir, (answered the lawyer, taking fire) my merit, sir, has consisted and does consist, in my ability in my profession, which has enabled me to do the most essential service." — — — "Service! — — To whom? (interrupted the other dryly) to yourself only. Your abilities, were they ten times greater than they are, have been amply rewarded by the place you enjoy, and the large sums of money they have brought you in from your deluded clients. But pray, sage sir, what important service have your great abilities been

of

of to his lordship, that he should be under such obligations to you? I should be glad to know that."

"What service! (replied the lawyer hastily, being almost put off his guard, by such a cross question) what service do you ask, sir! Sir, I think it beneath me to answer a question that betrays such ignorance. But, if you do not know, they did who gave me the employments I hold; and they knew besides that my promotion secured my whole family. My countrymen always stick fast by one another."

"Hah! hah! hah: great services! very great services, truly (said the other) I am really ashamed to hear a man who should know better, mention such things. I am, indeed. But you must be blinded, quite blinded by your opinion of yourself, or you would never attempt to put them in competition with the services I have done his lordship, in the instruction of his son's tender youth."—

"How, sir! (interrupted the parson, who had hitherto listened to their dispute as unmoved as if it had been a visitation-sermon, where some country curate pretends to teach his betters their duty) you instruct his tender youth! Pray, sir, have more regard to truth in what you say; the instruction of his youth was committed to other kind of hands than yours. It is well known."—

"That I got you the little share you had in his education (said the other, catching the word out of his mouth) by informing of your predecessor's putting that ballad into his hands, and that you positively agreed to be guided by me, in every thing you should attempt to teach him, before you were admitted to come near him. So that if you have any merit in what you did, you owe it all to me. But some people have very bad memories in things done to serve them."

"But do you think that teaching him to read was such a mighty matter? The clerk of the parish, though he was good for nothing else, could have done that much well enough. That is the least part of a young gentleman's education, the very least part, and what many a one makes a very good figure without. It is sufficient for people who have their fortunes to make

to mind such things ; gentlemen are above them. They can keep servants to read and write too for them, without their taking such a trouble ; and let me tell you, sir, the world thinks the living you got, a sufficient reward for all you were able to teach him.

“ But, gentlemen, I must remind you both of something which you seem to have forgot. There are other material reasons which not only prevent your getting the preferments you look for at present, but will also most probably prevent your ever getting them, and indeed make what you have already gotten be looked upon with surprize and discontent.

“ You must have forgot the affair of drinking those *disaffected toasts* certainly, or you would never give yourselves such airs as these. How can you, sir, expect that the real friends of his lordship, if they think at all about the matter, can like to see the court-rolls intrusted in such hands as yours ? Or the parish registers in yours, sir ? — No, no, gentlemen, you may both rest satisfied where you are. You will never rise higher, take my word for it. I know what defence you made, and how you came to escape so easily. But your business is done, take my word for it ; your business is done.”

The mention of the *toasts* was so unexpected, that it struck them both dumb. They hung down their heads and heard him out as convicted criminals do their sentence. But the lawyer, soon recovering his natural presence of mind. “ The toasts, sir ! (said he) I wonder how you can mention that affair to us, in such a manner ! Were not you as deeply concerned in it as we ?”

“ I wish I had, (replied the other) and then I should have been as well rewarded ; for to be sure you got a good fee, and *lawyers may say any thing for their fee*. Well, it is an old saying, that it is good to have a friend in court. Your brother brought you off with flying colours ; and we too had good look to be in such good company, or I know not how we should have escaped. You brought us off, as well as you drew us into the danger.

“ However,

"However, that escape has not made me so vain to think I was not in fault. I have not the assurance to rise my expectations so high as you do, and am humble content with what they please to give me, conscious that any thing is an extraordinary favour, and more than I should have received in any other lord's family in the kingdom; for which reason I shall strive to make hay while the sun shines; and as soon as a shower comes, retire into a snug corner, and enjoy my good fortune with thanks.

"As for you, gentlemen, who aspire to higher honours, you will find, perhaps, when it is too late, that you had better have followed my example. And most worshipful Mr. Seneschal, and most reverend Mr. Rector, I wish you both a good morning. — Pardon my menial services!"

With these words, he flung out of the room, leaving his two friends staring at each other in a situation whimsical enough.

CHAP. XIX.

Signal instances of greatness of spirit. Consistency of character maintained. A scene of uncommon tenderness.

THE parson was the first who broke silence. "Indeed, my friend, (said he, snuffing up his nose, and pinching his head in a melancholy manner) I fear there is too much truth in what he says, and that we shall never be able entirely to get over the consequences of that unlucky discovery; for which reason I will even strive to make myself easy, and not let the enjoyments of what I have, by fruitless attempts to get more."

"You are to do as you please, sir, (answered the lawyer peevishly) but I shall not stoop to be guided by the advice of such a mean spirited fellow. I should never have been forgiven, had they dared to shew resentment against us; and the same motive will make them not chuse to provoke us too far by their

fuls. I know how to deal with them. I will speak to all my friends. They are not bashful in asking, nor easily to be repulsed ; and if their interest should be unsuccessful, I will take another course, which seldom fails. I shall not submit tamely, I promise them."

"And pray, my dear friend, (replied the parson) may I ask what course that is ?

"I will oppose all the measures of the lord's servants in the court-leet, (returned the lawyer) and that in such a manner, that they shall not be able to make any objections to my conduct, but what will add to my consequence in the opinion of the people. I have a whimsical thought just came into my head. What would you say, if I should turn *patriot* upon the occasion ? I have presidents enough to justify me. And then the variety of such a scheme will be highly entertaining. I like the humour of the thing much.

"As for the Seneschal, I'll soon make him sick of his superiority. I'll contradict every syllable he says in the court-leet. My word there is good as his, and my friends will stand by me right or wrong ; so that I'll make them sorry for what they have done for me, if they will not do more ; and that will gratify my resentment at least, if my ambition is disappointed. No one ever provokes me with impunity."

"Nay, for that matter, replied the parson, (setting his hands a-kinbo, and putting on a look of importance) I do not mean to be quite passive neither, I assure you. I seek peace, it is true ; but then it must be on my own terms, or I shall not ensure it, I promise them.

"Nor shall I long want an opportunity of letting them know my mind. The vestry will soon meet on some extraordinary affairs, when I will object to every thing the rector proposes, and that will vex them all not a little ; for to my knowledge they have some things in view, which they will not like to be opposed in ; such as *making some alteration in the old surplus and cassocks, and enlarging the church, and widening the approaches to the communion table* ; but I will not consent to the stirring a stick or stone, or clipping off the most ragged shred ; all things shall remain as they are, merely

merely to disappoint them ; and then how silly w
they look in the eyes of the crowds, whom they ha
promised to make room for ?

“ They should not have let me know their secre
if they designed to break with me in this manner. N
no ! I do not mean to be quite passive neither, I affi
you. Our cloth has never been noted for tameness
submission. I will seek peace, but it shall be on
own terms, I can tell them.”

The two friends then shook hands, and applau
ing each other's spirit, parted for that time to pr
pare for putting their virtuous resolutions in exec
tion.

“ What say you now, (said the Spirit with a smi
to modern modesty and gratitude ? — But it is unne
cessary to make any reflections on such a scene as thi
They occur of themselves, with force sufficient
make a rational being sick of the world, and all
ways ; and I hope you are convinced, that chang
the scene makes no essential change in the prospect
Folly reigns every where alike. The palace is
more exempt from it than the cottage : — But soft
see something yonder, which will be worth attending
to. You have hitherto been principally engaged
viewing the folly of ambition ; I will now shew yo
the effects of love, its potent rival in the huma
heart.”

Saying this, he directed my eye to a chamber, wher
lay a woman languishing under a general decay of na
ture. Much as such a state must necessarily weaken
the force of beauty, there was a symmetry in he
whole figure, a softness and delicacy in her look
which even thus in ruin charmed the beholder, and
shewed how resistless they must have been when the
warm glow of health inspired their bloom. But the
an air of debauchery sullied all these charms ; and he
whole appearance bespoke a life worn out in vicious
pleasure, which had taken such deep root in her heart
that whenever she opened her eyes, a feeble glance of
loose desire glimmered through all the horrors of her
present state.

Every thing around her shewed the highest affluence and most tender care; and the most elegant accommodations strove to make sickness tolerable, and compensate, as far as possible, for the want of health.

But what particularly struck me was the tender anxious assiduity with which she was waited upon by a person, whose appearance shewed him to have been bred to a profession, and on an element, neither of them very remarkable for softening the manners, and giving the mind such a compassionate humane turn.

He was kneeling at the foot of her bed, chafing her clay-cold feet with his hands, to try if they could communicate any warmth to them. She seemed not insensible of such an act of tenderness, and raising her head from the pillow, "How shall I reward my hero, (said she, with a feebly-wanton leer) for all his care? Will this poor person of mine ever be in a condition to repay his pains and trouble with pleasure?"

"Let me but once more see my dearest girl well, (answered he, with a look of fondness and pity) and I shall think myself amply over-paid for all. Is there any thing that I can do, to give you ease or satisfaction? command my fortune; command my life; myself, and all in my possession, are solely yours."

"I want nothing, (replied she) while I have you. Stay but always with me, and I have no other wish. But why should I desire this! What pleasure can you find in the company of a poor sick creature, who is incapable of feeling any herself? I blame you not for seeking that satisfaction elsewhere, which it is no longer in my power to give you."

"Why will my dearest life (returned he, with an air of concern) think so meanly of me, as that I can have pleasure in any other company but hers. I never leave you a moment, but when my duty indispensibly calls me; and as soon as that is over, I fly back to you again with all the impatience of a youthful bridegroom."

"And when will that hateful duty call you again? (added she) How long may I promise myself your company now without such painful interruption?"

"My

“ My love (returned he) I am this very moment under a necessity of waiting on the admiral. I have given notice that my ship is ready for sea ; but I will forego all my hopes of honour and advantage rather than leave my dearest love, till I see you better. I have found an excuse to evade my going this voyage ; and by the time my ship returns, I promise myself that you will be able to take a trip with me in her to Lisbon, where the warmth of the climate will effectually restore your health.”

“ And how long will it be (said she) before you return from the admiral ? I insist upon knowing to a minute that I may not be tortured by an unexpected delay.”

“ I fear, my love, (answered he) that it will be impossible for me to leave him before dinner. He has often asked me, that it will look like disrespect to return him always. Besides, as I go to sue for a favour, it would be ill-judged to give him offence. But you may be assured I will not stay a moment that I can avoid. By seven at farthest.” —

“ By seven ! (exclaimed she) and must I ! — can I be so long without you ! — Well ! since it must be so, but do not be surprized to find me dead, when you come back.”

“ My dearest love ! (replied he, embracing her tenderly) this is the last time I shall leave you. I determined to tell the admiral that I am going out of town ; that nothing shall interfere with my care of you. Adieu my love ! let me find you in better spirits at my return.”

CH A P. XX.

The opening of a new scene gives occasion for some reflections which will probably be least agreeable to those who have most occasion for them.

DISTRESSED as the disconsolate fair one felt at his departure, the moment he left the room opened a new scene. “ Now is the time

she raising herself up with a spirit that could not have been expected from her looks) now is the time to put my design in execution! If I miss this opportunity, I don't deserve to find another." Then turning to an elderly woman who waited upon her, "Fly, nurse, (continued she) bid my sister come to me instantly, and observe the last directions I gave her."

The woman obeyed without delay; and the lady being left to her meditations, "Now shall I be happy! (resumed she in a transport) Now shall I be in some measure revenged on that object of my soul's aversion, man! O! that I could treat the whole perfidious sex in the same manner, exposing them equally to the ridicule of the world, and the reproaches of their own conscious hearts! But, as that is impossible, let this mean spirited, doating fool, bear the weight for all. If I fall a victim to the vice of man thus in the prime of life, it is some consolation, that I can wreak my resentment upon him, who seems alone to merit better from me. The world will attribute what I do to other motives; but I disclaim them all, and act only from the principle of revenge." — Saying this, she sunk back upon her pillow, waiting with the utmost impatience for the return of her messenger.

There was something so superlatively base and wicked in these sentiments, and the hyppocrisy which preceded them, that I could not avoid expressing the pain, they gave me to my guide. As soon as she had finished her meditations therefore, "O gracious spirit! (said I) what life must this vile woman have led, to harden her thus against every sense of virtue and humanity? and what uncommon injuries can she have suffered, to fire her soul with such an implacable passion for revenge?"

"Her life (answered he) has been that of a common prostitute; a life that necessarily effaces every tenderness of nature, as well as every principle of virtue: and the injuries which stimulate her to these more than savage sentiments, have been no other than the usual unavoidable occurrences of her wretched profession."

"How

"How (exclaimed I) does prostitution work such a total change in woman's nature? bad, too bad I am sensible its effects are; but I have always thought, that some, and these not the least amiable of the virtues were not quite inconsistent with it; I thought I had seen instances of benevolence, charity, and filial duty exerted by some of those unhappy creatures, which would have been an honour to the chastest of the sex. But I find I have been in an error."

"Chastity (replied he) is not the only virtue of a woman; but still, it is so essentially necessary to the perfection of her nature, that the want of it, if it does not absolutely incapacitate her from every other virtue, debases any feeble instances she happens to exert in them."

"Nor can it be otherwise. The moment a woman is known to violate this virtue, she is looked upon as a disgrace to her sex, and given up to infamy, even by the very persons who first seduced her to, and still participate in, the crime they persecute."

"Debarred thus from the benefits of society, where virtue is confirmed and enforced to imitation by example, she is obliged to concert with her sisters in vice, who to silence the voice of conscience, and keep up their spirits to pursue their miserable trade, vie with each other in wickedness; and glorying in their shame, profess to deny the truth, and ridicule the practice of those principles from which they have departed, till they harden each other in their iniquity, and become incapable of reformation."

"In such an abandoned state of reprobation, where merit can there be in a single act of virtue, that contradicts the constant tenour of their lives, and owes its rise perhaps to accident, vanity, or caprice? how likely will it be found in the ballance, when placed opposite to the innumerable vices among which it stands, and which always contaminate it in some circumstance or other?"

"But even this is not all. The most profligate of them sees the necessity of putting on the appearance of some virtues, to palliate the horror of her profligacy."

son. This is the reason of the error in which you may have been. Man requires but weak proof to convince him of what he wishes to be true; and therefore readily believes the reality of this appearance, and receives it as a sufficient atonement for the vice which gives him pleasure.

"Think me not too severe in what I say. There may perhaps be some instances to the contrary; but they are too few, in comparison with the others, to draw a more favourable conclusion from: and the danger which would attend such a conclusion is sufficiently great to justify so prudential and salutary a severity.

"The only safe rule to direct the judgment by, in all such cases, is this, *that a person who persists in the wilful breach of any one moral virtue, cannot be sincere in the profession of any other*; as a proper conviction of the duty of any must necessarily and invariably enforce the practice of all; that is, with allowance for the unpremeditated lapses of human infirmity.

"Nor is there a more dangerous error than this, of thinking that vice and virtue can be so far reconciled as to inhabit the same breast; or, *that it is possible to compound for the obstinate, habitual transgression of one duty, by the occasional performance of another*; the mean mercenary motive to such a performance taking away every shadow of merit from it, and contradicting the unalterable essence of virtue, which is pure obedience."

The spirit's reflections were interrupted here by the return of the nurse, with the persons for whom she had been sent. The moment they entered the room, the sick lady forgot her ailments, and raising herself up,

"Well, sister, (said she, looking at them with eagerness and delight) I suppose these gentlemen have been informed on what occasion they have been brought here. The moments are precious. Let us therefore do our business without delay; and then we may enjoy ourselves."

As soon as she said this, one of the gentlemen drew out pen, ink, and paper, and sat down directly to write her will, which she dictated with a readiness, that shewed

ed she had long studied it. When he had finished, she read it over carefully, and signed it, in the due form of law, before the other gentlemen, who were brought on purpose to attest this extraordinary transaction.

The moment this important affair was ended, the lawyer received his hire, and then he and the witness departed, to prevent surprize; when she immediately sunk into a state of weakness, that shewed her end approaching very fast, the extraordinary effort she made on this occasion having quite exhausted her strength and spirits.

Dreadful as such an alarm must naturally be, it shook not her resolution. On notice of her friend's return, she dismissed her sister, without the least mark of tenderness or regret, though the only relation she had in the world, and prepared to go through with her design with a constancy worthy of a better cause.

CH A P. XXI.

A life concluded in character. An uncommon legacy of love and gratitude. A particular circumstance, necessary to be attended to through the course of this curious work, is explained.

AS soon as he entered the room, he ran to her bedside with the utmost impatience, where he found her languishing in the arms of death.

Such a sight awoke his tenderness. He fell upon her neck, and wept over her in bitterness of heart. So genuine an expression of love operated as it were mechanically upon her, who had long been accustomed to return the caresses she received, however insipid or loathsome to her. She opened her eyes; and forcing a faint smile of fondness, "How could you think (said she) that I could live so many tedious hours without you? It is well, that you are come at length, to bless my eyes with one view more of all that they delight in. Take care of this poor body; see that it

is laid with decency in the grave ; and sometimes bestows a thought on one whose heart's last wish was to give you pleasure. I have a sister who would perform that melancholy duty ; but I have long broke all connection with her for your sake. You are the world to me ; and every tender tie of nature is summed up in your love."—With these words, she fainted in his arms : nor ever recovered strength to utter another.

As soon as her disconsolate lover recovered from the first transports of his grief, he gave orders for her burial, with a magnificence that far exceeded the present state of his own affairs ; but this he thought himself under an obligation to do, in return for her whole fortune, which she had bequeathed to him, by a will made in the beginning of her late illness ; and which amounted to a very considerable sum, though all earned by vice and infamy.

The next morning, after this last token of his regard was paid, he was surpris'd at receiving a visit from a person to whom he was an utter stranger. After the common compliments of meeting, the gentleman told him that he was come from the sister of the deceased lady, to take possession of such effects of her's as might be in his hands.

"I am sorry, sir, (answered the widowed lover, with a smile) that she should have given you this unnecessary trouble. My dearest girl's effects and fortune are all in my possession ; nor shall I part with them to any one."

"How, sir ! (replied the stranger) Not part with them to the heir at law ! Pray, by what right do you claim to keep them ?"

"And pray, sir, (returned the captain, somewhat offended at the manner in which the other spoke) by what right do you ask that question ?"

"Sir, (said the stranger) I am employed by her sister, to make a legal demand of her undoubted right ; and if you do not chuse to comply with it in this amicable manner, I know how to apply in another, that may be more effectual, though perhaps not quite so agreeable."

"That

"That is to say, (retorted the captain) you are lady's lawyer. Well then, good Mr. lawyer, as I fire to have as little conversation as possible with you and all the worthy gentlemen of your profession, I shew you my right."—Saying this, he unlocked a bureau, and taking out a paper, "Here, sir, (said he) is the lady's will, by which she has bequeathed to me every thing in her possession, If you please, I will read it to you."

"Very possible, sir, (answered the lawyer, with a significant smile) I do not doubt but it may be a copy of her's; and therefore shall not give you that trouble. But, pray, sir, will you give me leave only to look at the date of that will?"

"The date! Yes, sir, (replied the captain) here it is. It bears date about a year ago, just in the beginning of her illness."

"I see, sir, (added the lawyer) and in return for your readiness to shew me that, will now shew me my client's title for making her demand. Here, sir, is a will made the very day before the lady died, which she cancels that, and every other will she may have made, and leaves her whole fortune, real and personal, to her sister, charged only with a few legacies to her particular friends: and though you may not be much conversant with such affairs, you may certainly know, sir, that the last will takes place. As you are one of the principle legatees, I will read it over to you, if you please; at least that part in which your legacy is mentioned."

The captain's surprize at this piece of news was great, that he had not power immediately to make any reply; accordingly the lawyer, taking his file for an assent to his proposal, opened the will with great deliberation, and clearing his voice, with an hem or two, proceeded to read: "*Item*, In return for the great expence and trouble which my dearly beloved friend captain *Lovejade* has been at, in taking care of me, during this painful and tedious illness, I give and bequeath to him a lock of my hair, which I desire he will have put into a locket, and wear next to his heart, for my sake."

"Hold

"Hold, fir, (interrupted the captain, roused by such a cutting insult) let me see that will. Why, villain, this is not her hand! I knew it was not possible. This is a base and impudent forgery, for which you shall all be punished with the utmost severity."

Pray, fir, (answered the lawyer coolly) suspend such an injurious opinion for a moment. Look at the paper again, and you will see that it is not an original will, but an attested copy of one, regularly proved this very morning in the commons, where you may see the original any time you please. As you may think proper to take advice in a matter of this consequence, I shall wait for your answer to my client's demand till to-morrow morning, when I will call upon you for it; if you do not chuse to save us both that trouble, by sending all the lady's effects to her sister's house this evening; to prevent any mistake in which, here is a copy of a schedule of them, which we have signed by the deceased, and bearing equal date with her will: Here, and so, fir, I wish you a good morning."

Pray, stay a moment, fir, (said the captain, a good deal cooled by such an unexpected stroke) and give me leave to ask you a few questions. Though she has played me such a base trick, I presume I have a right to demand a reimbursement of the very great expences which her long illness and burial have cost me; and for which, you must be sensible I have received no consideration. You appear to be a person of character, and as such I expect a direct and candid answer from you."

"I am glad, fir, (answered the lawyer) that you have reason to entertain a better opinion of me, than you were pleased to express a little while ago; but I cannot give you such an answer as will be very pleasing to you. You say, you have received no consideration: pray, fir, did not the lady cohabit with you, before and during her illness? Now, fir, light may make of such a matter, the law admits such cohabitation as a valuable consideration, not only for whatever expences a man may be at while it continues, but also for the recovery of a promised maintenance, after it ceases; and therefore you can

"Hold, I.

E

have

have no right to expect payment, especially as I buried her of your own free will, and without consulting her heir. If you have any farther commands I will wait upon you when you please; but at present I am in haste; a gentleman waits for me at the coffee-house. Sir, your servant."

It is impossible to describe the captain's situation at the discovery of such a base deceit. He railed at the whole sex in the grossest terms, and cursed his credulity for being made a dupe to one of the most famous of them.

When he had vented the first transports of his rage in this manner, it occurred to him, that the will might possibly be a contrivance of the sister's and her lawyer, who having some way learned that he was that day, fixed upon it as a proper time to date the pretended will.

But this conjecture was soon overturned, upon examining his servants, who all informed him of the mistress having gone out immediately after him, and brought their mistress's sister, with that very person, and many more whom they did not know, who were shut up in her room a considerable time, and went away but a few minutes before he returned.

Disappointed in this hope, he went directly to the attorney of his acquaintance, in whose judgment he had a confidence, to try if there was not some remedy in the law for so great an abuse as he had suffered; but he had the mortification to find, that he must submit to the whole, and be satisfied with *the lock of his beloved's hair*, though he wanted not that legacy to keep her eternally in his remembrance.

"Well, (said my guide, as soon as this extraordinary scene was ended) what is your opinion now of the virtues of a prostitute? Their profession is but a pretend regards they never feel; and you see she has preserved a perfect uniformity of character to the end of her life; and yet she was one of the most remarkable of them for all the virtues you mentioned. As to her lover, base as her treatment of him was, he drew it upon himself, by his insatuated dotage; he deserved to be deceived for placing confidence

woman whose whole life he knew to have been a series of deceit — What is the matter? You seem surprized at something.” —

“ O gracious spirit, (answered I) what can this mean? We have attended the progress of this last scene through a series of many days; and yet I see all the other objects round me exactly in the same situation as when it began. How can this be? Have their actions been suspended, till we should be at leisure to attend to them?”

“ Your surprize (replied he) is natural. You judge according to the mode of man’s conception, whose limited faculties are incapable of comprehending things at once; and therefore are obliged to receive them in a slow succession, which you call time. But beings of a superior nature are not under that disadvantage. Our powers are more extensive; and the shortest glance shews us the whole progress of the most complicated transaction, bringing all its parts together in one view before us. This power I have for the present communicated to you, as I could not otherwise attend to give you the information you desire in the tedious course of human comprehension. But you will understand this better, when I tell you, that what seemed to you a series of many days, in reality was not a minute, according to your manner of speaking. Attention to this will prevent a like surprize on future occasions.”

CHAP. XXII.

An account of an universal genius. Some curious secrets in the trade of an author; with a new way of replying to impertinent remarks.

WHILE I was reflecting on what my guide had just said, “ Turn your eye this way, (continued he) and observe that person yonder. He is one of the longest instances of the danger of indulging an indiscriminate desire of praise; and being seduced by the sweet smiles of success to form schemes for acquiring even

the most imaginary pre-eminence over the rest of mankind.

“ To understand the nature of the distress, which, as you see, corrodes his heart, and makes him incapable of enjoying the favours fortune has heaped upon him, it will be necessary to take a short view of his life.

“ He was born in one of the lower ranks of the people, where necessity silences the voice of ambition, and obliges men to have recourse to the more immediately useful arts, of industry and labour, to supply their own wants, and minister to the convenience of those above them. But though the poverty of his parents prevented their extending their views beyond their own sphere, in the way of life they proposed for him, a dawn of genius, which marked the opening of his youth, prompted them to exert the utmost of their abilities in giving him the first rudiments of a good education.

“ Such care, when dictated by prudence, and not the fond result of injudicious partial vanity, is seldom unsuccessful; though for a while it seemed to counter-act their principal design, by leading him into pursuits of a different nature from those marked out for him, and making him despise and neglect the low illiberal profession he was bred to.

“ But one of those lucky accidents which govern life, and shew the insignificance of human forecast and wisdom, effected what their most sanguine fondness could never have suggested the remotest hope of.

“ After he had languished for some years in obscurity and indignant discontent at the severity of his fate, he happened one day, in a mixed company, which had met upon some public occasion, to sit next to one of the most ingenious persons of the age.

“ The conversation in such places generally turns on subjects the least agreeable to men of reason; and is carried on with such noise and confusion, that, in their own defence, they are obliged to enter into private chat with those next them, to avoid being applied to, if they appeared disengaged.

“ Accordingly

"Accordingly, the gentleman asked him some of the common questions which lead into discourse, designed only to consume time; but he, ambitious of appearing to advantage in the eyes of a person of his character, soon took an opportunity to divert the conversation to those subjects which he knew would be most pleasing to him; in which he displayed such extensive reading, such delicacy of taste, and depth of judgment, with so modest a diffidence in his own, and submissive deference for the opinion of the other, that he politely invited him to his house, for the pleasure of improving their acquaintance.

"From that day, his prospects began to brighten. The gentleman, pleased with the thought of having rescued a man of such abilities from obscurity, not only received him into the closest intimacy, but also introduced him to the knowledge of such of the great as were most eminent for patronizing literary merit, whose favours in a manner prevented his very wishes.

"The first advantage he took of this happy change was to quit the mean profession he had been educated in, and enter into the most reputable in which the abilities of the human mind can be exerted; where the interest of his new friends soon crowned his fame with the solid reward of an honourable and affluent establishment.

"During the life of his friend he preserved his esteem by the most artful and delicate address. Sensible of the implacability of literary rivalry, he carefully avoided the particular paths the other had advanced in to that envied eminence he had now enjoyed, and to which he asserted a kind of exclusive right, directing his studies to different a way, that far from being jealous of an emulation, his friend gave the sanction of his own most sanguine approbation, to establish his fame; and at his death gave the strongest proof of his confidence in his abilities and integrity, by entrusting him with the care of some of his works, which were not yet published.

"So honourable a testimony established his reputation in the highest esteem; but a vain ambition of

appearing in the absurd character of *an universal genius*, soon precipitated him from this envied height.

“ For the reason of the reserve which had hitherto kept him within his proper bounds being now removed, he resolved to give his parts their full scope ; and to shew that his taste for the works of imagination was equal to his judgment in the abstruser pursuits of science, he published a collection of *old ballads, with notes and emendations, critical and explanatory* ; in the course of which he discovered such a contempt for the opinions of all other writers, and obtruded his own with such an air of authority, without deigning even to give any reasons in their support, that he provoked the universal indignation of that irritable race ; one of whom, in particular, levelled the canons of ridicule against his work, in such a spirited, poignant manner, that, in despite of his confidence of his own opinion, and contempt for that of others, he was obliged to suppress it at a very considerable expence.

“ The least slip on the summit of a precipice is dangerous. The first disgrace he met in this affair gave his reputation a deep wound ; and another work, published soon after, in which he advanced opinions contrary to the general sense of mankind, and undertook to support them, by arguments either trifling, or evidently subversive of them, entirely ruined it for ever ; and he became of no more consequence in the literary world than if he was actually dead.

“ However, that very opinionated confidence, which drew him into this disgrace, prevented his sinking under the weight of it ; and enables him to look down with disdain upon all who presume to differ with him, without even vouchsafing to take the least notice of their objections.

“ But under this appearance of unconcern, his heart is a constant prey to the pangs of disappointed ambition, and the most rancorous envy ; and he secretly descends to the meanest artifices to restore his lost credit and destroy that of his hated rivals.”

Just as my guide had concluded his account of this extraordinary personage, a man entered to him, whom

he seemed to have expected for some time. "I suppose, sir, (said he, without deigning to take the least notice of the profound respect with which the other approached him) you mistook the time when I let you know I should be at leisure to see you; or you would not have made me wait this half hour."

"I most humbly beg your pardon, sir, (answered the other) but I was delayed by an unexpected affair. A particular friend of mine called at my shop, just as I was coming to wait upon you, to inform me, that there was a very smart pamphlet to come out in a day or two against your last book. As I happen to have connections with the printer, I went to him directly, and by much intreaty prevailed upon him to let me have one of them in sheets, which I have here brought with me, in order that you may have an answer to it ready, before it can have done us much mischief. Here it is — Will you please to look into it?"

"No, sir! not I! (replied he) I am not at leisure to read *smart* pamphlets at this time."

"But, sir, (returned the other) consider what a prejudice it may do your book." —

"A prejudice! — No, sir, that is impossible; (interrupted he peevishly) quite impossible, that a thousand pamphlets, though never so *smart*, in your expressive phrase, should do any prejudice to that book. Nothing can do a prejudice to that book in the opinion of the learned and judicious."

"If they cannot do the book a prejudice, sir (said the bookseller, as he now appeared to be) I know to my cost, that they can prejudice the sale of it; which is so heavy already, that I am like to be at a considerable loss, if something cannot be done to push it on. And for this purpose, I have here brought you all the books and pamphlets which have been written against it; and shall take it as a favour, if you will write a general answer to them altogether; in which it will not be amiss to throw in some personal reflections against the authors, that may provoke them to reply; by which means a controversy may be set on foot, that may raise a curiosity to read the book."

"Many a book is helped off this way, that else would have lain long enough upon our hands. Nay, I know an author of eminence who always answers his own books, and then replies to the answers again, and both with such animosity, such ripping and tearing, that one would swear they were written by the bitterest enemies: by which management, he not only sells his book, but also makes a good penny of the controversy too."

"Well, and pray, good sir! (answered the author who had listened to him all this while with the greatest appearance of indifference) what do you tell me the fine story for? do you want me to imitate the practice of your eminent authors?"

"Pardon me sir! (replied the bookseller) I would by no means give you that trouble. I am sensible your time is too valuable to be spent that way. But I hope you will think proper to answer the objections which have been made by others. Your own reputation, as well as my interest, are concerned. You know I paid you an high price for the copy, and have printed the book in the most elegant and expensive manner, and it would be hard to let me lose by it now."

"I have told you often, (returned the author haughtily) there can be no danger of your losing. Such a book must necessarily sell; and the attacks of those insignificant scribblers only prove its merit. Envy is always the shadow of excellence. However, as you seem to be alarmed at these answers, or whatever they are called, to satisfy you, I will reply to them."

"Sir, I am much obliged to you (said the bookseller, pulling a parcel of books and pamphlets out of his bosom and pockets) here they are. You see there have been a good many nibbling at you."

"Pray, sir, (said the author, with an air of disgust) do not give yourself the trouble of taking them out. I have no manner of occasion for them."

"I beg pardon, sir, (answered the bookseller) I did not know you had them. Then I will only leave this last, which you have not seen."

Sir,

Sir, I have not seen any of them (replied the author) nor do I desire to see them. Pray, be so good as to take them all away together."

"How, sir! I thought you said you would answer them."—"True, sir. But I did not say also that I would read them, I hope."—"Sir,—I do not understand you, sir. How can you answer books, without reading them?"

"Sir, you ask a great many questions. Why, sir, I know that any thing written against that book must be nonsense, which I will say in the preface to another book I am now writing; and this will be a sufficient answer."—"And in the mean time, before that book comes out, they will have damned the other eternally. Sir,—Sir,—I beg pardon; but I cannot help speaking. I am much afraid that such an answer will not be sufficient. That—that—that is only giving your opinion of your own book."

"And pray, sir, whose opinion is better? who is a better judge?"—"I do not say any one is a better judge, sir. But sir, the public may require a—a—a more particular answer. If that would do, any author would say so much in defence of the worst book that ever was written."

"Well, sir, (said the author, putting on a look of offended dignity) as I do not think that book the worst that ever was written, I shall not say any more in defence of it, let the public expect what they will. I am positive it must work its way, in spite of a thousand such ignorant cavillers. But, to make you easy, if it should not sell, I will make good the loss to you. You shall not suffer by it."

"I am much obliged to you, sir, (answered the bookseller, making a most profound reverence) That is sufficient, full sufficient. I hope you are not offended at my anxiety. I would by no means."—

"Pray, sir, (replied the author) let me hear no more of it. If you are satisfied, I hope that is enough."

CHAP. XXIII.

Extraordinary instances of one author's regard for reputation of another, with a short method of silencing competitors for literary fame.

THE adjusting of this delicate affair dispelled the cloud that hung upon their brows, and restored their mutual complaisance and good humour.

"I imagined, sir, (said the author) reaching bookseller his snuff-box, as a pledge of perfect amity; you must have had some particular business with me, by the earnestness with which you desired to see me."

"Sir, (answered he) I wanted to beg your opinion of that manuscript which I took the liberty to show you last week. The author called upon me yesterday and insists upon having my definitive answer this afternoon."

"And pray, what does he ask for that fine affair?" — "Sir, he says he will not abate of the price I wrote you word; which, high as it is, I think I had better give him, as his name will not fail to sell the book."

"Sir, you know your own business best; but I am satisfied it can never sell, and will certainly ruin a gentleman's reputation: to prevent which, as I have a great regard for him, if I thought my interference it could never come to his knowledge, I would buy it myself, and burn it; by which means his necessities would be supplied, and his character saved."

"You are very good, sir. There are few who would be at such an expence, to serve a friend as you are to-day. As to his knowing any thing of the matter, I hope you are sensible you can depend upon me."

"Then sir, here is the money to give him."

"The money, sir! yes, sir, that is just the author's money. But pray, what do you design to let me have for my profit on it. You cannot expect that I should buy and sell, without some profit?"

Profit, sir! I did not imagine you could desire profit in such an affair as this, where you have no trouble and not run any risk of loss."

"No trouble, sir! Dear sir, you little think what trouble I shall have with this gentleman about the publication of this book; or how many evasions and lying excuses I must invent, to put him off. The generality of authors, it is true, give themselves no farther trouble about a book the moment they receive their copy-money. It is equal to them, whether it is burned or published. But this is a different case. The gentleman expects to establish a character by his works."

"Well, sir, and what profit do you expect?"

"Why, sir, every thing being considered, I cannot possibly let you have it for less than as much more as the author gets."

"How, sir! as much more as the author gets! is not that a very unreasonable demand?"

"Not at all, sir. Not in the least. But if you think it is, I am far from pressing you to give it. It is paying very dear, to be sure, for doing a man a piece of service; and I shall lose considerably also, by obliging you. Why, sir, there is such an expectation of this book, that the common number of a first addition is bespoke by the trade already. In short, I do not know what I may lose by parting with it. As to its being double what the author gets, that is no rule. What authors get is but a trifle, in comparison of the profits of a good book. The gentleman had but an hundred for that atheistical book you answered; but the bookseller made a good thousand of it. I was very unlucky in missing that book."

"I hope, sir, the answer made you amends. You paid no such price for that; and christian charity will not let me doubt its selling better than such a vile book. The age, bad as it is, cannot be so depraved as to prefer that book to the answer."

"Alack a day, my dear sir, the answer was quite another sort of thing. It never sold at all. No body had the least desire to read the answer."

"That is very odd! very odd indeed! Well, sir, I shall not dispute with you. Here is the money."

"Sir,

"Sir, I thank you. But that is right! Have you heard, sir, that the gentleman who wrote that other book, the first edition of which I bought up for you along with the right of copy, from the publisher, and sold again for your account to the pastry-cooks and chandlers shops as waste paper, has written another on one of the most interesting subjects that can be conceived, which he designs to publish himself; as the trade, prejudiced by the supposed miscarriage of the former, have refused to give him his price for it."

"Obstinate, shameless wretch! To write again, after suffering such a disgrace! But is there no way to prevent his exposing himself in this manner?"

"No, sir, but by buying his book from him, which, as I said before, is a very dear way of doing him service; especially as his pride makes him hold it at a very high price, to shew that he is not conscious of any demerit to have deserved the former disgrace."

"Opinionated coxcomb! However, I will disappoint his vanity, at least for this time; so even buy it for me as cheap as you can: and I hope you will not desire any profit in this affair."

"Only the allowed profit of the trade. Ten per cent. no more; though you must be sensible, that as the failure of the former book proceeded not from any want of merit in it, I might reasonably expect to make much more by publishing this myself. There is another affair, that gives me a great deal of uneasiness. The author of that book in which you made the alterations called at my shop yesterday, and abused me in the grossest manner, charging the miscarriage of the book entirely on them, and threatening to take personal revenge of me, if I did not discover who had served him in so base a manner. I put him off for that time as well as I could, by declaring that I knew nothing of the matter, and would make the strictest enquiry about it; but what to say to him when he calls next, I know not, as I imagine you would not have your name mentioned."

"Ignorant blockhead! The only merit in the book is in those alterations. No! my name must not be mentioned."

mentioned by any means ; and your best way is to insist that you know nothing of the matter ; and if he gives you any abuse, or offers to threaten you, put him into the hands of a lawyer, and he will soon make him quiet."

" Indeed, I believe that is the only method of getting rid of him. Sir, I wish you a good morning. I shall observe every thing you have said to me."

As soon as he was gone, the other began to reflect upon the transactions of the morning. " Well, (said he, after musing for some moments) if I do pay something dear for those books, I remove two formidable rivals without any more trouble ; and not that only, I can also take what I like out of them, and insert it in my own works ; in doing which there is nothing unfair, as my buying them has made them absolutely my own property. As to answering those pamphlets, it is by no means worth my while. I will not immortalize such paltry scribblers, by taking any notice of them. Had *Virgil* treated *Bavius* and *Mævius* with proper contempt, their names had perished with themselves, and not been handed down to latest posterity, in his works."

CHAP XXIV.

A rare example of modesty and respect on a most trying occasion. A sure way of getting a good character with some short reflections on literary ambition, and other more serious matters.

AS he was in the midst of this modest meditation a servant came to let him know that a particular gentleman was come to wait upon him. "Shew him into the parlour (said he) I am engaged at present. When I am at leisure to see him, I will ring."

"He is come (continued he as soon as he was alone) to insult me with the success of his insignificant, trifling book. But I will mortify his pride; he shall see that I am not in the number of his foolish admirers."

Saying this, he fell into a silent contemplation of his own consequence, which he indulged so long, that his visitor shewed the height of complaisance, in waiting for him.

At length, however, the important bell rung, and he was admitted; when advancing with a profound reverence, "I have made bold to wait upon you, sir, (said he) to impart an affair that I hope will not be unpleasant."

"Pray, sir, what may that be?" (answered the other) without descending from his dignity, by making a return to his salute.)

"Sir, (replied he, rubbing his hands, and looking at them, as if to admire their whiteness) I have an advantageous offer made me, to write a second volume to my last book; I should be glad to know in what particular manner you would have me mention your name."

— "Mention me, sir, I do not understand you."

"I mean, sir, what you would have me say of your works, as I design to take notice of all the eminent writers of the times."

"Sir, I am obliged to you for your intention to give me a compliment; but I had much rather you would let it alone. I have no ambition to be classed among your eminent writers, nor even mentioned in their works. I would gladly have excused it before."

"I hope you do not think it a discredit, sir, to be spoken of in a work that has ran through fifteen editions?"

"The number of editions is most certainly an excellent proof of the merit of a book; witness *Onania*, and the *Pilgrim's Progress*. Indeed, my friend, I must be candid with you, I had much rather that book had never been published, for your own sake. I know the breath of present approbation is apt to intoxicate; but if you will make an estimate of the manners and principles of the times, you will own that it implies a discredit to please such an effeminate debauched taste as reigns at present; and that no work which succeeds now can possibly meet the approbation of posterity. And who would be at the pains of writing, if it were not for the hope of making his name immortal?"

"All, sir, have not the same sublime way of thinking, nor the abilities to execute it, which you are blessed with; but that must not make us neglect to improve the talent given us. Present fame in such matters as these is present profit; and that is the first object to be desired in my humble state. For the opinion of posterity, I must rely upon the manner in which you shall please to mention me in your works: but there is one thing in which I must have expressed myself imperfectly, as you seem to have mistaken my meaning. When I mentioned eminent writers, I was far from designing to rank you in a class with any other. There are degrees in eminence; the first of which, I am sensible, you possess alone, and that in so distinguished a manner, that your writings only are sufficient to vindicate the age from the reproach of ignorance and barbarism. The eminence of other writers is only in comparison to the common herd of mankind, and raises them not to a level with you, "there sitting where they dare not soar."

"Well, sir, if you think my name will be of service to your book, I am satisfied that you should insert it; and, to save you trouble, will write that part myself, as I did on the former occasion. But, pray, sir, do you not think it necessary to answer the objections made to your last book before you write another on the same subject?"

"No,

"No, sir, not in the least; I intend to follow your example, and take no notice of them."

"But — sir — your case and mine are quite different. My works are designed for future ages, and therefore cannot be affected by such feeble attacks. But yours, which are but the blossoms of a day, are liable to be blasted by every breath of wind. The deep rooted oak feels not the breeze that overturns the gawdy tulip."

"Pardon me, sir, I presume not to make any comparison. I am justly sensible of the difference. However, as I do not find that they have been able to do me any prejudice, I shall take no trouble about them. You will please to let me have your account of your own works as soon as you can, as I shall send the book to press directly. Sir, your most humble servant."

There was something so despicably mean and disingenuous in these last scenes, that I was really glad when they were ended.

"You see (said my guide smiling) how low ambition can stoop. Of all the passions which actuate the human heart, the strongest and most universal is the love of fame, next to those of self-preservation and continuing the species; both of which even it often surmounts."

"To this in some, however mistaken sense, may every pursuit of man be traced. The felon who fired the temple had the same desire of an immortal name with him whose better genius prompted him to build it, and most of the atrocious crimes which disgrace the history of mankind, may in some measure be deduced from the same principle."

"But of all the instances of the tyranny of this passion, the most violent and at the same time the most absurd in its effects, is literary ambition."

"The obvious motive of a person's undertaking the laborious task of writing to the publick, is a benevolent desire to promote their happiness, either by informing the understanding, or alleviating the cares and anxiety of life by rational entertainment. — I mention not those whom necessity drives to this method of supplying their wants."

"But there are very few who write from this motive alone; and even of those who may have originally

set out with it, scarce one perseveres without yielding to biasses of a nature directly contrary, and sacrificing the most sacred principles of strict and moral virtue to a vain lust of popular admiration, and a jealous envy of his competitors; the virulence of which not only poisons the enjoyment of that fame which he has already acquired, but also precipitates him into schemes for engrossing more, which disappoint his design, and deprive him of what he really deserves."

"Of the justice of these observations (said I) this person is a sufficient proof; but there is one thing the reason of which I cannot comprehend, and that is the servile complaisance with which the other author bore his haughtiness, and the fulsome adulation he paid him in return of his insults and contempt."

"You may remember (answered he) I told you he was advanced to an honourable establishment in his profession. In virtue of that establishment he has many opportunities of preferring others to very lucrative employments under him. This is the secret motive of that behaviour in them both, which gave you such just offence."

"Of all the professions of men, there is not one whose principles are so pure from every reproach of this kind as this; yet such is the force of human perversion, that there is none in which those vices of servility and pride are so universally practised; and that with so little disguise, that, as if the very institution were inverted, the former is become the general means of rising in it, while the latter is looked upon as the most prerogative of power, and borne with patience, from an hope of exerting it on that exaltation which all aspire to; for, however strange it may sound in speculation, experience invariably shews that meanness and pride spring from the same base principle, and always succeed each other on a change of circumstances."

CHAP. XXV.

The pleasures of being a great man. Mysteries in ticks. One drawn battle leaves room for another. Children and fools fall out at play.

TURN your eye now (continued my guide) yonder little village, and behold a shadow of human grandeur, that may enable you to form a just estimate of the substance. That person whom you see so embarrassed with the ensigns of state, and sinking under the weight of his imaginary importance, was one of the principal servants in his master's house.

"So near a view of power fired him with an ambition to exert it himself, though in the most limited delegation. Accordingly, he prevailed with his master to make him steward of that manor where he now is. Some particular circumstances in the tenure of which oblige him to indulge the tenants with all the pageantry of power, all the formalities of liberty, though without any of the real advantages of either.

"Nor is the power entrusted to their temporary governors more solid. The servant of the superior wants of his master, he goes with his hands tied and acts a part prescribed for him, in which the least departure from his orders is immediately overruled, and his presumption checked with a severe reprimand.

"Such a mockery of command is the most painful aggravation of servitude. It is an insult that makes even wretchedness more wretched. Yet so strong is the vanity of the human heart, that the inestimable advantages of independence are daily sacrificed to this worthless empty show.

"How this mimic state is supported by those monarchs of a day, and what pleasure it affords to balance the pain of such a tantalizing situation, you will soon see. But that you may more distinctly understand the scene, which is just ready to open, it is necessary to give you a general sketch of the principal things upon which it turns.

"I observed to you, that there are some particular circumstances in the tenure of this manor. The chief of these, and that on which all the rest depend is, that though subordinate to, and dependant on the principal manor, in which the lord resides, it is still a distinct manor in itself, with a right to hold courts, and make laws, for its own government; but that these laws are not to be of force, till they are approved of by the courts of the principal manor; which courts have also a right to make laws to bind this.

"The perplexity and contradictions in this complicated affair are too evident to require being pointed out; yet, far from striving to remove them, in the proper management of this very perplexity consists the whole mystery of the politicks of this manor.

"For the stewards, and those whom they can attach to their party by lucrative employments, always make pretext of the articles of *subordination* and *dependence*, to oppose every attempt made in the court-leet by the apparent friends of the manor, to promote its separate interest; as, on the other hand, those friends eagerly catch at and insist on the opposite ones, of *its being a distinct manor and having a right of making its own laws*, to embarrass the ordinary course of the government, to embroil the stewards with the people, by proposing laws in their consequences destructive of that dependence; 'till, wearied out by finding that their labour is in vain, or (as is much oftner the case) obtaining some grace or pension, the real objects which they had in view, they at length drop their opposition, just in the critical moment when it might have been expected to produce some important consequences.

"Thus all things remain in their former state of uncertainty and confusion; each party thinking they have done enough in baffling the attempts of the other, and without absolutely giving up the cause of contention, but leaving the field open for future disputants, to try their fortunes on a more favourable occasion."

"It must appear strange to you, that the steward should be ordered to obstruct the interest of a manor belonging to his lord. The whole system of human politicks

politicks is incomprehensible. The reason for this conduct is this: the situation of that manor is so convenient for commerce, and the other natural advantages of it so many, that they apprehend if it was not under by every discouragement and restriction possible, reconcilable with the faintest shadow of liberty, would soon rival, if not run away with the trade of the principal manor, in which its wealth almost wholly consists; and consequently, as wealth is the foundation of power, in time arise above its subordination, and perhaps shake off its dependence.

“ One thing, by the way, I must observe to you, which makes this contest still more extraordinary; it is that it subsists entirely between the manors themselves, the inhabitants being all connected by every tie of nature; those of this manor, or their ancestors, being all removed from the principal one thither.

“ Such discouragements and restrictions are not submitted to without great reluctance by the inhabitants, who cannot see themselves cut off from making proper advantages of the blessings of nature, and languishing in unnecessary poverty without repining, and indignation at a treatment which appears to them equally ingrateful and unjust; as they have always preferred their filial duty to their mother-country untainted, and on all occasions displayed the steadiest attachment to the general interest, and to the family of the present king.

“ These natural sentiments of the people are on every occasion inflamed to a degree of madness, by the eloquence of men for that time called *patriots*. (I have told you the import of this word as it is used at present) who by pathetick harangues on so favourite a subject, and promises of redressing those grievances, gain their confidence so far as to be put at the head of a plausible opposition to the measures of the steward, which they persist in 'till their zeal is cured by a *proper* application, and they obtain the objects which they had all along in view.

“ Thus, you see, the whole secret of these disputes consists in pelting each other with a set of words which have no determinate meaning, and are therefore

different senses by the opposite parties, as occasion requires; and that the controversy may not improperly be compared to a *game of draughts*, where a number of men are sacrificed to raise one to power; and when the game is ended all are promiscuously thrown by, and the antagonists part as good friends as ever.

But there is nothing in these disputes more unaccountable to inexperienced reason, than the manner in which they are carried on. As the event of the game is always foreseen, it should be imagined that they might play their cards coolly, and without wrangling about tricks which can make no alteration in the success. But the contrary is always the case; and no sooner are they engaged, than, forgetting that they are only *playing* on both sides, they fall together by the ears with the most virulent animosity; and dropping the matter originally in dispute, break out into the grossest charges of personal reflection and abuse, as if the sole object to be gained was only who should make their antagonists appear in the blackest light.

Horrid as this more than brutal ferocity appears, it arises from that source of all evils, interested design. The worthy *patriots* are sensible that every stroke they give the supposed oppressors, affords the malignant pleasure of revenge to those who think themselves oppressed; with whom it also confirms their interest, by increasing their fears of a reconciliation, which they have by sad experience is always made at their expense; as the opposite paltry retort the abuse thrown upon them with equal eagerness, to obviate the design of the others, and gratify a natural desire of revenge, all without the least regard to truth or justice.

Thus are the most sacred bands of society broken, and we a detestable purpose; and wounds given often to the purest characters impossible ever to be healed.

You now see what a desirable object this shadow of power is. Indeed, the disagreeable circumstances which attend it are so many, and so soon dissipate the illusion of vanity, that very few would groan under it for the appointed time, if their resolution was supported by a prospect of gain, of which, though

none

none ever stood in less need, not one ever was more greedy than this person before us, whose own private conduct has also aggravated all the unavoidable inconveniencies of his situation, and made it many times more disagreeable than it need to be.

"For as the nature of his office necessarily embroiled him with the greater part of the tenants, so the harshness of his behaviour has given such offence, even to those whose interest it is to be upon good terms with him, that most of them have dropt all friendly intercourse. Nay, some have gone still farther, and, in the warmth of their resentment, threatened to call him to a severe account for some slights, they apprehended he had offered to their privileges, of the honour of which they are jealous to a degree of madness, as soon as he shall be divested of his assumed character, and delivered into his own: a threat equally disagreeable to the delicacy of his honour and his constitution."

C H A P. XXVI.

A good way to make up for a bad market. Mystery of state-preferment. Servants must not advise their masters. The comfortable effects of modern honour. A heavy cloud gathering.

AS soon as my guide had concluded this account I turned my eyes to the person who had given occasion to it. He was sitting in a sumptuous apartment, and, by the anxiety in his looks, seemed to be waiting for some body on business of importance.

I had not observed him long when the one he expected entered, and advancing to him with an air of familiarity, which seemed to agree but badly with the difference in their appearances, "Well, sir, (said he) I have seen those people, but do not find that any of them care to deal with us, though I offered them lump sum penny-worths; for I never liked to stand higgling and trifling one way or the other."

"Why well. That."

What can be the meaning of this? (answered the steward) I thought those things were always ready money; none of my predecessors ever missed selling them."

"Very true, sir; (replied the other) but they had better times; better times to make their markets in. At present every one is so taken up with the disputes in the court-leet, that they can mind nothing else. I am with all those *patriots*, and all the patriots that ever were, or ever will be, were at the devil. They do nothing but make disturbances wherever they are. The brokers, who used to find out customers for your predecessors, imagine that those fellows will carry every thing before them this time; and therefore do not care to meddle with the affair, for fear of being brought in a scrape with such a spiteful crew; and even the mob is so strongly seized with this same spirit of *patriotism*, that the very toll-gatherers have refused to pay a clerkship of the market; nor has one of the militia men bid a single penny for that vacant halbert; so that if it were not for what we got by the sale of those vicarages, we should have made but a damned bad hand of it indeed."

"This is bad luck; (returned the steward, shrugging up his shoulders) damned bad luck; but we must try to bring it up some other way. My wife was speaking to me this morning about a scheme she has in her head, of inviting all her female acquaintances to make a party at *Loo* every Sunday evening, when she does not fear stripping them of every penny in their pockets, by her dexterity at packing the cards, and slipping *Pam*. Now, I think it would be no bad addition to her scheme for me to get the men together at the same time at dice, when your old trick of juggling might be of rare use; especially as I should be ready to witness for you upon all occasions, and even for you through by my authority, should you be so unlucky as to be caught. Eh! what do you think of that?"

"Why, faith, (said the other) very well. It may do very well. As to my being caught, let me take care of that. I have not practised so long among the expertest

perdest hands in the county-town, to be caught by a parcel of country bumpkins. Or, even if any of them should suspect me, I know how to bring myself off. It is but pretending to be affronted, stripping directly, challenging him to fight, and before he can be on his guard, hitting him a plump in the breast-basket, that shall make him throw up his accounts; and I will engage he'll have but very little stomach to account me after. Many a scrape of the kind have I brought through in this manner, where a faint-hearted fellow would have confessed the fact, and been dipped in the horse-pond. No! No! let me deal with them. Not for that matter, you know I can bring others off besides myself. You would not have escaped with a little dry *drubbing* that day, if I had not played a good stick in your defence. Never fear me; I can fight."

"Well, (interrupted the steward, who did not feel much pleased with the latter part of his speech) must we let those fellows, those *patriots*, go on thus without opposition? Is there nothing to be done to stop them?"

"Why, ay! (said the other) that is just what I am going to mention. I think the best way is for me to go down directly to the court-leet, which is now sitting, and try what a little bullying will do, since fair words have failed. I have known a kick and a cuff prevail more than an hundred fine speeches before now. If they should run restive, I am not afraid to take a box with the best man among them. I have not forgot an old nack at a cross-buttock yet; that I have not. — But, that's right! What do you design to do about that place of keeper of the court-rolls? I have a thought just come into my head, that may perhaps be better than giving it to any of those fellows. What do you think of giving it to me, and I will return you half the profits; or if I can sell it, half the purchase-money?"

"Give it to you! (answered the steward) How can that be? You are no lawyer; and you know that place has always been in the hands of one of that profession. The last was reckoned the ablest attorney in the whole country."

If the last was an able attorney, (replied the other) predecessors knew no more of the matter than myself; so that we can easily get over that objection".

But then your offer is quite too low; (added the steward) half the profit, or half the purchase-money! No! no! That will never do. But if you have a mind to take it at one fourth of the profit, or purchase, you shall even have it; and you should consider that this is so much for nothing; all clear gains."

With all my heart, (said the other) be that as you please. I mentioned it solely for your advantage, as you are not likely to make any thing of it, as matters go. I had no view to myself at all in proposing it. — Well, now if you have nothing else to say to me, I will go and see what I can do at the court-leet."

Nothing (answered the steward) but to wish you success: and, do you hear! let me see you as soon as you return. I shall be impatient to know what passes."

As soon as this necessary person was gone, the steward began to prepare for the reception of a visitor, who was to be treated with a little more ceremony.

This was one of the principal gentlemen of the manor, in whom age had cooled every passion but that of attachment to his interest, in which he was now so closely connected with the steward for the time, though he had long been one of their warmest opposers, that without the least attention to their persons or private characters, he assisted to carry on the business of his office with all his power.

The pains which the steward took upon this important occasion were sufficient to have made laughter burst his sides. He placed himself before a large glass, where he adjusted his dress, moulded his visage into due dignity, and practised the nod of state with a proper mixture of condescension and pride.

Just as he had finished conning over his lesson, the gentleman entered, and paying his compliments to him in a polite and respectful manner, which the other received with more than Spanish gravity and pride, "I come, sir, (said he) to talk to you about those people who have given you so much trouble ever since you

have been in your present office. I am afraid you have not taken the proper method of treating them. I am well acquainted with their tempers, and know the way they are to be managed. It is better to comply a little with a set of wrong-headed men, than be continually involved in broils, which at best can bring nothing but vexation."

"Comply with them, sir? (answered the steward putting on an air of importance) No, sir, that I shall not. I know the dignity of my station, and shall never debase it by making compliances with a beggarly mob."

"Sir! sir! (replied the other) this way of speaking may do you much harm. In this same beggarly mob are many persons upon a level with any man in his private capacity, and who are so far from begging from others, that all they desire is to keep their own. I have seen too much of these disputes, and know by experience that nothing is to be done with these people but by fair means. You may buy, but can never buy them into any thing. In a word, sir, you are sent to do your lord's business; which you must be content to do in the best manner you can."

"I believe, sir (returned the steward, swelling his nose like an angry turkey-cock) you forget whom you speak to, or you would not presume to talk in such a manner. The business must be done by those who are hired to do it, who must work for their wages as they are ordered, whether they like it or not. Now, sir, you are one of those, I tell you that I want your obedience and not your advice; and that if any thing mis-carries, I shall impute the fault to you, and *strike you off the list*. I suppose you have a private understanding with those fellows, that makes you so sanguine for their behalf; but you must remember that you are now at the head of your mob; and therefore must not think to parley with your masters, and make conditions as you did then. *The moment you capitulated you lost your consequence*; and now are no more than a common hireling."

It is impossible to describe the condition into which this speech threw the person to whom it was addressed.

Conscience

Conscience
despica
the sev
some m
him of
at the
pride o
rest, a
ed to c
front.

A fra
of m
of th

JUST

op

alter

lent fe

age w

the roo

and th

word

The

ascept

from f

allen t

with l

eneat

re he

shift to

not lon

Wh

ght,

er th

o cry

ing!

Such

cupef

Conscious of the justice of what he said, the base and despicable state to which he was fallen struck him with the severest remorse and anguish of soul. He stood for some moments in a conflict of passions, which deprived him of the power of making an answer; till impatience at the imputation of guilt, however just, by the false pride of man called *honour*, rising superior to all the rest, and taking possession of his whole soul, he resolved to do himself immediate *justice*, for so gross an affront.

CHAP. XXVII.

A strange apparition disperses the cloud. A new method of making a good steward. The perilous adventures of the knight of the halter, with other savory matters.

JUST as he was going to execute this resolution, open flew the door, and in rushed a person with an halter about his neck, and every sign of the most violent fear in his whole appearance. His lengthened visage was as pale as death. His eyes rolled wildly round the room, and his knees knocked together, as he ran and threw himself at the steward's feet, unable to speak a word.

The steward, whose delicate nerves were instantly susceptible of the least affright, started back in horror from so terrible an object; and would certainly have fallen to the ground, had not the gentleman who was with him, forgetting his resentment, or thinking him beneath it, ran to his support; at whose repeated desire he ventured to lift up his eyes, when he made a shift to recognize his valiant friend, who had left him not long before to go and bully the court-leet.

While he was gazing in astonishment at so strange a sight, the terrified trembling wretch, though still under the illusion of his fears, recovered strength enough to cry out, "O save me! save me! They are coming! they are coming!"

Such an exclamation awoke the steward from his stupefaction. He took the alarm, and throwing his

haggard eyes around the room, returned at the same instant, in a feeble faltering voice, "Wh—wh—who are coming?"

There was something so extraordinary in this scene, that the other gentleman, who was ready to burst with laughter at the droll figure which the steward and his friend cut, staring and stammering at each other, could not tell what to make of it.

When he had enjoyed the sight for some time, he poked to *the Knight of the Halberd*, who was still upon his knees with his hands joined together, and lifted up in a suppliant posture, and telling him the danger was over, be it what it would, he stooped to take off that apparent cause of his fear.

But no sooner did he touch it, than the other, whose imagination was still full of the scene he had just gone through, mistaking him for one of his pursuers, fell at length upon the floor, for he was unable to rise, and roared out with all his might, "O spare me! murder! mercy! spare me! spare me! I never will attempt the like again! never say or do any thing offensive to the people, or prejudicial to the interest of this manor, while I live! O spare me! spare me!"—

This exclamation while it seemed to direct the gentleman's conjectures to the cause of the wretch's fright, made him still more earnestly curious to learn the particulars of it. For this purpose he raised him from the ground, and by many soothing and encouraging expressions, at length restored him to his senses.

As soon as he had recovered himself so as to be able to speak, "O, sir, (said he to the steward, who had stood all this while staring at him without power to utter a word) what have I undergone since I saw you? never will I enter that court-leet again, while I live. I hope the doors of this house are shut, and that there is no danger of their pursuing me, even here."

"Who should pursue you, sir? (answered the gentleman, for the steward had not yet opened his mouth, and this speech was far from restoring his spirits) or what have you undergone to put you in such a fright? you see you are safe here: no one dares to enter this place

place in pursuit of you. Compose yourself then, dear sir, and tell us what has happened to you."

The knight of the halter at this went to the door, and clapping his ear to the key-hole, to listen whether there was any noise, bolted it fast, and then returned to the steward, who had, by this time, recovered himself so far, as to make a shift to repeat the desire of the other gentleman, that he should tell what had happened.

"As soon as I left you, sir (said he, throwing his eye every moment towards the door) I went directly to the court-leet, where I took the first opportunity to do as I had said; for one of the jury-men happening just then to drop some expressions of dislike at your manner of doing business, I took him up short, and said, that he deserved to be well drubbed for his insolence, in presuming to find fault with his master: and that if they did not do their duty they should be made to do it; or their courts should be taken away from them, and their manor governed by the laws of the principal manor, without all this fuss and trouble.

"At these words the whole court took fire, every one calling out to me at the same instant for satisfaction. But I was prepared for this, and therefore, to go through with my scheme, I roared out as loud as they, that I was ready to fight the best man among them, in support of what I had said, and for a guinea by, if they pleased, and instantly began to strip.

"But they soon let me know that this was not the way of fighting they chose; for, like a parcel of blood-thirsty villains, they instantly clapped their hands to their swords, saying, they scorned that vulgar manner, and expected the satisfaction due to a gentleman, which I might take my choice of sword or pistol, to give, as I liked.

"But I begg'd their excuse there. I liked neither: for though I could give and take as hard knocks as the best of them, I knew nothing of their damned swords and pistols; I had never been used to them; and did not chuse to run the hazard of losing my life to learn now. I therefore thought it best to try if I could not satisfy them some other way; and accordingly as soon

as I could be heard, begged their pardon if I had said any thing to give them offence, and promised to take better care for the future.

"The reason of this sudden change in my manner of speaking was too evident. They instantly turned from me with a contempt worse than any thing but their anger; and I began to hope that I should come off with a spit in the face, or a kick on the breech at worst.

"But unfortunately the affair had taken wind, and just as I was going to steal away, in broke the mob in the most violent fury; and while some of them laid hold of me, the rest behaved in the most outrageous manner, railing at you and all your friends, and breaking open every room in the house in search of you.

"As they were at this work, some of them happened to find your steward's gown and cap, one unlucky dog ran out, and in an instant returning with the great *wooden-man* that you have seen standing as a sign at the ale-house door in the next street, they directly clapped your gown and cap upon it, and placing it in your chair at the upper end of the hall, called it by your name, and said, it was just as good a steward as your honour.

"There was something so droll and ridiculous in the figure you cut (I mean the wooden man in your gown and cap) that, provoked and terrified as I was, I could scarce refrain from laughing along with the rest; especially when one of them stooping behind the chair made a speech for you, that seemed to come from the wooden-man, and took off your voice and manner for the life.

"But this was all a joke to what followed. For sooner were they tired with ridiculing and abusing you in this manner, than turning all their rage upon me, they threw that halter about my neck, and led me away to hang me on that great high sign-post before your door, where some of them had even the assurance to talk of hanging you also, if ever they should lay hands upon you.

"But, luckily, just as we came to the fatal post, of the jurymen, more moderate than the rest, and

great favourite of the mob, happened to meet us, and, laying before them the consequence of such an action, by much a-do procured me an opportunity to make my escape in hither; which I did in the manner you saw, without even stopping to take off the halter from about my neck, as I imagined they were all at my heels. And I heartily wish, that we were well out of this damned riotous place; for I am very much afraid that now the mob is risen, they will break into the house, and hang us all up."

It is impossible to describe the different expressions of fear which successively appeared in the steward's face, while the other was telling this story: just at the terrible conclusion of which, a cat happening to dart across the room after a mouse, his apprehensions immediately took the alarm, and imagining the mob was breaking in, he gave a loud shriek, and fell down in a swoon.

The gentleman instantly ran to his assistance; but the moment he stooped over him, he received such a favour from the effects of the poor man's fright, that he started back, and clapping his handkerchief to his nose, ran to the other side of the room.

The knight of the halter, who was now pretty well recovered, perceived what had happened, and calling the servants, gave their master into their care.

CHAP. XXVIII.

*An appearance of danger the most convincing argument
A strange character of a strange sort of people. The
best foundation for popularity. The mystery of patri-
ism, with some low prejudices of education.*

THE first thing the steward did, as soon as he came a little to himself, and had got over some of the various effects of his fright, was, to send for the gentleman, and tell him, that his confidence in his friendship was so great, he was resolved to be guided entirely by his advice for the future; and accordingly he gave him power to make what terms he thought proper with those whom he had held in such contempt but a few hours before.

The gentleman had now an opportunity of returning the haughtiness with which the steward had treated him in the morning; but thinking that such a manifest humiliation as he had undergone sunk him beneath his resentment, he scorned to take any farther advantage of it, than just to give him some advice, how to carry on the business of his office with less disgrace to himself, and less trouble to those concerned with him, than he had hitherto done.

Accordingly, "How, sir, (said he) can you condescend to take advice from me? — and make compliances with a beggarly mob?"

"Dear Sir, (interrupted the steward, alarmed at his mentioning things which tended only to make matters worse) do not think of any thing that is past! I am sorry, very sorry! — and beg your pardon most sincerely."

"You desire me, sir, (replied the gentleman, without deigning to take any notice of his apology) to bring about a reconciliation between you and those gentlemen, on whatever terms I think proper. Before any terms are offered, it will be necessary to alter some things at which they have taken just offence. Till this is done, it is in vain to attempt a reconciliation; or even should a kind of one be patched up for the present, it is impossible it should be sincere, or lasting; and

then, the second disagreement will be worse than the first.

"Now, sir, if you are willing that I should point out these things with freedom and candour, and will promise to alter them, in case I shew just reason for it, I shall most readily undertake to restore harmony between you and them yet and am not in any doubt, but I shall be able to accomplish it."

"My dear friend, (returned the steward, overjoyed at these words) I shall hear any thing you say with the greatest pleasure, and will punctually follow your advice in every particular."

"I must inform you then, sir, (said the gentleman) that you set out upon a wrong principle in your behaviour to the tenants of this manor, on your first coming among them; and this laid the foundation of all the uneasinesses which have arisen between you since."

"The characteristicks of these people are *pride, hospitality*, and *courage*; all which, a natural impetuosity of temper makes them apt to carry into extremes."

"As most of them are descended from, or allied to, the best families in the whole country, and as they enjoy, in appearance at least, the same honours and privileges here as the tenants of the principal manor do, though they are sensible that they want the essential part of them, which is power; they look upon themselves as on a level with any of their lord's tenants, and are ready to take fire at the least slight which they apprehend to be offered, either to themselves or their darling privileges."

"As to their hospitality, it is acknowledged in terms of the highest respect, by all who have ever happened to come among them; and though they have not equal fortunes with you of the principal manor, the cheapness of their country, or their wanting opportunity to gratify many of the most expensive artificial wants, which dissipate the wealth of the others, enables them to indulge the generosity of their tempers in a manner which very few other people have any notion of; and for their courage, it is too well known all over the country, to require any proof."

" Do not think, sir, that I am labouring an unmerited panegyrick on people, because we happen to be of the same country. I am above such a vain weak prejudice, and speak my opinion as dispassionately as I should on any point of mere speculation.

" Far from being inclined to flatter them, I am sensible that these qualities are too often carried, as I have said before, into an extreme, which makes them cease to be virtues. Their pride hurries them into violations of the most amiable of the social virtues; their hospitality swells into profusion, and ends in intemperance; and their courage, by being made subservient to mistaken notions of honour, on every trifling occasion degenerates into a savage fierceness that is a disgrace to humanity.

" Now, sir, instead of paying attention to these faults, (to call them no better) and attaching them to you by a proper address, as a moment's cool reflection would have suggested, by an unlucky mistake, you either overlooked them quite, or thought them not worth shewing any regard.

" Thus you treated themselves with haughtiness and shewed an open contempt for their idolized privileges. You expressed a disapprobation of the hospitality with which they entertained you, and ran into the opposite extreme yourself to a shameful degree; and you affected to inveigh against the vicious excess of courage, with an indiscriminate asperity that seemed to betray a general want of it.

" Consider a moment, and you will confess that the consequences of this conduct could not avoid be disagreeable. They returned your haughtiness with hatred. Your avowed contempt of their privileges alarmed their apprehensions of an invasion of them, and poisoned the weapons they prepared for their defence; and the least suspicion of want of spirit sinks a man into the lowest degree of contempt.

" I am sensible, sir, that it must be very disagreeable to you, to hear these things. Be assured it is no less so to me to repeat them; but before a wound can be healed, it must be probed to the bottom. A false tenderness only prevents the cure.

" Wh

“ What I would advise therefore is, that you should immediately treat the gentlemen of the manor with politeness and respect, and as your equals, except in the office which you have the honour to fill: — that you should partake of their hospitality with an appearance of satisfaction, and return it with grace and magnificence; — and that you should take all opportunities of rewarding true courage, to shew that your dislike is only to the vicious extreme.

“ If you observe these few short hints, I will engage that you recover the respect of the tenants; and then every thing you desire follows. I speak from experience. I have known great things done, solely by this conduct. This was the secret that won one of your predecessors the hearts of the whole mob, and kept them so quiet all the time of the riots in the next manor, by which he gained such honour: and no one who has observed this rule has ever failed to do his business without trouble; as it obviates every attempt to make him personally disliked, the first step to embarrassing his measures.

“ Nor is there any difficulty to discourage the attempt. Affability amply rewards itself in the pleasures of friendly intercourse, and a proper politeness is the most certain way of preserving respect.

“ As for hospitality, it in some measure includes every social virtue, and yields such happiness in the exertion, as often over-balances prudence, and leads into profusion.

“ It is inconceivable what extraordinary things have been and may be done, by this virtue only. It gains the most solid and extensive influence. No resolution is proof against the pleasures of a genial hour. Among these people in particular, the very excess of hospitality is of more weight than every other virtue, and even compensates for the want of all the rest. *Give them but drink enough, and do with them what you please.* They can see no fault in the man who makes them drunk; they will see no virtue in him who will not.

“ It was this, and this only, that enabled me to maintain such an absolute power over them, as I did for many years. My house was always open, and my table flowed with wine; but, when I had any point to carry,

carry, I broke through all bounds. I pressed them to drink; I set them an example myself; and in the height of their spirits never was refused any thing I asked, however contrary to the dictates of reason, or interest.

"In these unguarded moments, the charms of hospitality are irresistible; nor will pride permit them to revoke in a cooler hour what they have then promised. The *harangues* of orators, the *promises* of patriots, make no impression, unless the head is warmed with wine, to receive them with proper force.

"As for those *patriots*, there is one unerring way of dealing with them. Treat them with complaisance, and an appearance of regard, and you take off half their consequence. The mob will immediately imagine, that there is a secret understanding between you and them, and desert them with indignation; by which they will be obliged to submit to your own terms, without even the trouble of a formal capitulation.

"For, to capitulate they always intend, be their professions never so sanguine and high, as soon as they have satisfied their passion for popularity, and their price is offered: being convinced that their opposition in reality signifies nothing when combated thus with address; and that their consequence consists merely in the want of judgment in their opponents, though they are permitted to play out their farce, to keep up an illusion so pleasing to the people, and save appearances.

"These are the principal things necessary, indeed indispensably necessary, to carry you through your office with ease and reputation; though there are also some others which will be found very conducive to that desirable end, and which I shall therefore take the liberty just to touch upon slightly.

"This manor, though it has made large advances of late, is yet a century behind the principal one, in the refinements of luxury and liberties of pleasure. Many things, therefore, which are constantly practised there, cannot be done among us, without hazard of giving offence to prejudiced weak minds.

"One instance will be sufficient to prove this, and serve for a rule to judge by in other cases:

"The

"The belief of a revealed religion is yet pretty general here, and the forms of it therefore necessary to be observed with an appearance of respect, as the vulgar and ignorant are apt to entertain a disadvantageous opinion of persons who slight them.

"For this reason the polite custom of *playing at cards, on the days appointed for religious duties*, which prevails so universally among people of fashion with you, is looked upon here with a kind of horror, as a manifest violation of laws human and divine. I therefore think the public practice thereof improper, in your house especially, to which all are apt to raise their eyes for example; not that I am insensible of the convenience of such an agreeable way of passing a tedious evening, which superstition has devoted to idleness.

"But, beside this reason, there is another also, which makes *gaming*, not only on these days, but at any time, highly improper in your family. It is a maxim with gamesters always to deny their winnings, always to magnify their loss. Now, when it is known that there is deep gaming carried on at your house, when all who go there are heard to complain of their losses, and none to own their gains, the conclusion formed by the generality of the world will be very unfavourable. They will imagine that you do not play fair; or, at least, that your expertness gives you an advantage, which it is ungenerous to take: and there is no character which these low-bred people hold in greater detestation than that of a *gambler*, or *cheat at play*, though in never so genteel life or high station; with which their prejudice is so strong, that they cannot associate any one virtue, or good quality.

"I shall not trouble you with any farther particulars. I have now given you my advice, with freedom and sincerity; and, if you approve of it, shall be proud of assisting you to put it in practice."

"Sir, (answered the steward, who was now sufficiently humbled to hear any thing, and had stood all this time like a school-boy that had been caught robbing an orchard, while his master reads him a lecture on the eighth commandment, without any other thought but getting out of his present scrape at any rate) I am
much

much obliged to you for your friendship; and shall oblige you to serve every thing that you have said with the greatest care. But, in the mean time, if you think it proper, I should be very glad that you would take some method of letting those people know my resolution, and settling matters with them upon some amicable footing; for I cannot bear to live any longer in this horrid way. As I said before, I submit the terms intirely to you, and shall confirm whatever you please to do."

Such an unlimited commission flattered the gentleman's vanity, as it proved his consequence with both sides. Accordingly he undertook it with pleasure, and acquitted himself with such address, that in a short time all parties appeared satisfied, and the steward had a prospect of a little peace to enjoy his grandeur, after so much trouble and affright.

C H A P. XXIX.

A famous war-scene. The modern art of generalship. A new method of reformation, with the lamentable history of a penitential procession.

"He that's convinc'd against his will,
Is of his own opinion still."—

THOUGH the steward, to extricate himself from the difficulties in which he was entangled, had assented to every thing the gentleman proposed, there was something so contrary to his natural disposition in the scheme of life laid down for him, that he very soon grew weary of it, and performed his part with such a bad grace, as in a great measure destroyed the merit even of what he did.

While he was plodding on thus, through thick and thin, an affair happened that shewed his character in a new light.

A gang of outlawed smugglers had landed in a remote part of the manor that lay upon the sea-side, to look for some provisions and other necessaries, of which they were in great want.

The inhabitants not caring to have any dealings with them, hunger forced them to pillage two or three cottages, near the place, of their poultry; and to send a threatening message to the next village, that if they were not immediately supplied with some bread and cheese and a barrel of beer, they would go and plunder that also.

Such a piece of insolence provoked the young fellows of the village so highly, that they brandished their cudgels, and were for marching off directly to attack them. But there happening to live two or three warm pedlars in the place, who did not chuse to run the hazard of having their packs rummaged by such customers, in case the young fellows should be over-matched, they prevailed upon the parish-officers to comply with the demand; and in the mean time sent an account of the affair to the steward, that he might take proper methods for driving those fellows away.

Bad news encreases faster in its progress than a snow-ball. The account, by the time it reached the steward, was exaggerated in the most formidable manner. The smugglers, who were only a few shabby half-starved wretches, were multiplied into an army, provided with every military appointment; and the courage and conduct of their captain raised to an equality with the greatest generals of the age.

Such a representation was far from being agreeable to the steward. He immediately summoned all the principal gentlemen of the manor, to consult what was proper to be done in such an emergency; and after hearing all their opinions, that the affair was of so little consequence, it would be sufficient to send the petty constable, with his attendants, he gallantly declared his resolution to raise the *Posse* of the manor, and march against them himself.

"Gentlemen (said he, setting the button of his hat before, and looking fiercely) I know more of this matter than you imagine, perhaps. I have been a serjeant of militia for some years, and know how to give the word of command. *Present your firelock! — To the right about! — Shoulder your muskets! — Fire! — Aye! aye!* Let me alone, I know what to do, I will teach them what it is to have a soldier to deal with."

Accordingly

Accordingly he gave orders to have the *Posse* raised directly; and as he knew that fighting was only one part of the duty of a commander, he resolved to shew the extent of his abilities, by making proper preparations for his important expedition.

The bustle and hurry on such an occasion kept up his spirits for that day pretty well; but upon consulting his pillow, he found that of all the occupations of ambition, war was least agreeable to his constitution. He considered, that be the enemy never so few, a single shot would do his business; that his own pistol might burst, or his men fire awkwardly, or, in short, a thousand accidents happen which he had no desire to be in the way of.

Nor was his resolution raised any higher by the advices he received the next morning; and which were continually coming in one upon the heels of another, each still more terrible than the last.

In this distress he bethought himself, that as it was impossible for him to draw back now, without exposing himself to contempt for ever, his only resource was to waste time in making preparations, till the smugglers, either terrified at the report, or content with their booty, should think proper to go off.

Accordingly he set all hands to work to put the old guns, pistols, swords, and bayonets, that were stuck up as trophies in the manor-hall, in order; and particularly to scour a *rusty suit of armour* that had hung there for ages, which he designed to wear himself, for fear of accidents, considering prudently that *the safety of an army often depends upon that of their leader*.

While all this was doing, no body seemed so busy as he, running here and there, urging the workmen to make haste, and giving them new orders every moment, which countermanded the last.

But all these great preparations might have been spared; for the smugglers had been so roughly handled by some of the country-fellows, whom they had attempted to rob of their butter and eggs, and who, if they had any arms, would have let but few of them go home to tell the story, that seeing the rest of the neighbourhood

preparing

preparing to attack them, they prudently took to their boat, and made off while they could.

For the people not having military skill enough to see the necessity for such great preparations, against a few poor despicable wretches, had resolved not to wait for the steward's arrival, but to drive them away themselves.

It is easy to conceive his joy at this account, the merit of which he modestly took entirely to himself, writing the lord of the manner word, that *frighted at the fame of his preparations, they had ran away, without daring to wait his approach.*

The airs he gave himself on this occasion are impossible to be described with proper force. He borrowed a book of military discipline from an old soldier in the neighbourhood, and getting some of the terms by heart, talked of nothing but *armies*, and *battles*, and *marches*, and *sieges*, shewing how he would have attacked them if they staid; how he would have cut off their retreat; besieged their entrenchments; in short, done every thing that ever had been done by the greatest general on the greatest occasion.

The very appearance of a military passion, though thus in burlesque, began to reconcile the mob to him; especially as they had not an opportunity of seeing into the ridicule of it. But an accident soon happened that effectually turned his heart against them for ever, and made him resolve to get from among such a turbulent crew, as soon as he could.

As he was busied one Sunday afternoon in his usual employment, of repeating his oft-repeated lesson in military matters, to some company who had dined with him, his wife enters in a violent hurry and disorder, with a piece of paper in her hand, and reaching it to him, "There (said she) read that, and see what we are to do! it is a fine thing truly, to live in a place where the mob is to direct their masters. For my part, let me but get safe home once more, and I will give them leave to treat me as they please, if ever they catch me here again."

The steward, on looking into the paper, found it to be a kind of a letter, directed to his wife, and signed, *The Mob of the Manor*, to let her know that, "understanding

standing she had made an appointment to *play at cards* that evening, at one of her neighbours, they took the liberty to inform her, they would do themselves the honour to be of her party."

The insolence of such a message surprized all present, especially the gentleman who had made up matters between the mob and the steward before, and happened to be one of the company; "What can this mean madam? (said he, thinking that his former mediation gave him a right to interfere) I hope there was no foundation for such a report."

"What report, sir? (answered she) I do not understand you."

"Why, madam, (replied he) the scandalous report of your designing to play at cards this evening."

"I do not know what you call a scandalous report (returned she, with a look of disdain) my neighbour Mrs. *Tofspot*, came yesterday to tell me that she had got a keg of choice old rum; and as she knows I am very fond of a glass of good punch, invited my husband and me, to meet half a dozen other neighbours at her house to play a game at cards, and spend the evening. This is all I know of the matter."

"And really, madam (said the gentleman) this is a great deal more than I am glad to hear; as I was in hopes I had convinced Mr. *Steward* of the impropriety of this before."

"Well, my dear (said she, turning to her husband) without deigning to make any reply to the gentleman, what do you design to do? it is almost time. Will you go?"

"Not I indeed (answered he, shrugging up his shoulders) (I have no desire to meet such company, I assure you."

"And so we shall miss our share of the punch (returned she, whispering him) this is hard! very hard and after I have set my mind upon it so, too."

"I cannot help it (replied he) I will not run the hazard."

"Then get rid of these people as soon as you can (whispered she again, after a little pause) I have a thought in my head that will do as well as going." And then speaking

speaking aloud, "Well, my dear, I submit to you; but as we do not go there, I think it would not be amiss if we went to church, the bell rings."

"And pray, madam (added the gentleman) give me leave to advise you not only to deny your having had any such appointment upon your hands, if the affair should take wind, but also never to attempt a thing of the kind again while you are here; for I can tell you, this new correspondent of your's, *the mob* of this manor, is particularly whimsical sometimes, and may unluckily do something that would make you cut a very ridiculous figure."

To this the gentlewoman did not think it worth her while to make any answer; but turning up her nose with an air of contempt, went out of the room.

As soon as she was gone, the gentleman began to read the steward a lecture on his breach of promise; to which I gave no more heed than himself, my attention being diverted to a more entertaining object.

You heard the gentleman say (said my guide) that the mob of this manor is sometimes whimsical: look yonder, and you will see a proof of it.

On his saying this, I turned my eye to the next street, where I saw half a dozen shabby fellows following a gentlewoman's chair carelessly, and as if they were strolling without any particular design, till it stopped at the door of an house which I found to be Mrs. *Tofspot's*, when in an instant two or three hundred of them rushed out of the bye lanes and alleys, where they had been lurking for the purpose, and surrounding the chair just as the chairmen were going to carry it into the house, one of them stopped it, and lifting up the head, desired the gentlewoman very civilly to walk out.

"What is the matter? (said she with an air of authority, as if she thought to intimidate them) what do the fellows mean?"

"Only to give you a little good advice, madam (answered he that spoke before.) And therefore I hope you will please to come out of your chair quietly, and not oblige us to be so rude as to pull you out. Never fear, madam! we do not design to do you any hurt."

As

As it might be dangerous to disobey so absolute authority, the gentlewoman complied directly, amazed and terrified as she was; and standing in the midst of them, the same fellow who appeared to be the orator of the mob, proceeded: "We understand, madam (he, making her a low bow, and holding his hat in his hand, which he had very politely pulled off, when he first spoke to her) that you are coming here to spend the evening at cards: now, as we know that to be a very profane, wicked, and pernicious custom, and what has brought many a one of our companions to the gallows, we think it our duty not only to prevent you this time, but also to take care that you shall never be guilty of it like again. We therefore humbly insist, that you give us your oath here, in the sight of all these good people, that, from this blessed moment, you will never play at cards, dice, or any other game, on the *sabbath-day*, as you will live. Here is the book; observe it is the *Bible*! You must swear without any equivocation, or mental reservation whatsoever. Come! it is for the good of your soul."

The gentlewoman was by this time so terrified, that she would have sworn to impossibilities, to get out of such hands. She therefore obeyed them without hesitation; upon which the whole mob gave three huzzas that made the street ring; and then the orator, addressing himself to her again, "We are glad, madam, (said he) that you complied so readily with our request, as we should have been very sorry to use any violence; and we hope your example will be followed by the rest of your party, for we design to make a general reformation; but, first, we will do ourselves the honour to see you safe home, as you can have no business in that house now."

With these words, the whole mob began to move, and the gentlewoman judging rightly, that it would be in vain to make any words with them, was obliged to turn about, walk home with them and listen with an appearance of attention to the pious exhortations of the orator, who walked close by her side all the way, with his hat under his arm, and handed her every now and

then over the kennel, with as many fantastick airs as a moderate fop.

It is impossible to conceive a droller figure than she made on this occasion, walking so far through the dirty streets, (for they took care to lead her the longest way about) in the midst of such a shabby crew, in all the rippery fullness of dress, powdered, frizzed, and furbelowed to the very tip of the mode; and consequently without any thing on her head to hide her shame, and save her from the rain, which fell plentifully all the time.

As soon as the procession arrived at her door, the orator made her another speech; and then the mob, giving her three cheers more, left her to her meditations, and retired to finish their pious work.

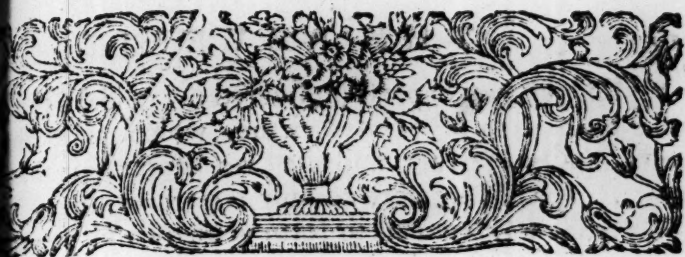
But they were too late now; the birds were flown. For, as the *swearing* part of the scene had passed under Mrs. *Tosspot's* window, she, and such of her company as were come, had a full view of it, and none of them being piously enough inclined to perform such a penitential ceremony, as soon as ever the mob moved off with the gentlewoman, they all slipped out at the back-door, and made the best of their way home; and Mrs. *Tosspot* herself, just then receiving a card from the ward's wife to let her know, "that she had been taken so very ill of the *cholick*, that she could not possibly wait upon her that evening, but should be glad of a glass of her rum, as she imagined it might do her good," took a couple of bottles in her lap, and hurried away to her, to tell her the news, and congratulate her on having escaped such a ridiculous disgrace as had befallen their friend, at the circumstances of which they had many an hearty laugh over their smock.

"You see, (resumed my guide) *the vulgar sometimes* *is right*, though their method of proceeding is rather singular. But this example, notorious and striking as it will have no effect. The practise against which it is levelled is become a fashion, and, like every other fashion, must have its run, 'till something else, perhaps equally improper, supersedes it."

From

From that day the steward never enjoyed a moment of happiness, being continually apprehensive of some further insult from the mob, as he could not resolve to desist from the practices which gave them offence ; accordingly, when the time of his departure arrived soon after he hugged himself on his escape, and laid down his grandeur with ten times greater pleasure than he had felt on taking possession of it ; and in return for the easiness he had drawn upon himself, carried away a heart invenomed with the most rancorous hatred against the whole manor, the effects of which he resolved never to miss any opportunity of making them feel.

BOOK.



THE
R E V E R I E :

O R, A

Flight to the Paradise of Fools.

B O O K II.

C H A P. I.

The happiness of having more money than a man knows what to do with. The extensive knowledge of the lovers of VIRTU, accounted for. Poets not judges of painting.

K. **B**EFORE I had time to make any reflections on the ridiculous inconsistency in the conduct and characters of all the actors in this last scene, a person caught my eye, who seemed to promise more pleasing entertainment than I had hitherto met with. He was just entering into the prime of life, and appeared to be in possession of every advantage that could enhance the enjoyment of that season of delight.

So bright a prospect filled my heart with joy. "At length, O gracious spirit! (exclaimed I in an extasy) at length I have found a man whose life affords another view beside wretchedness and folly, and reconciles me to humanity. Let us observe him for a moment, and here in a bliss that seems to be so pure."

"The

"The joy you express (answered my guide) is the genuine emanation of exalted virtue, which, rising above the malignity of envy, finds its own happiness in that of others. I shall therefore comply with your request with pleasure, and leave you to form your own judgment on so interesting a subject."

Proud of this permission, I directly fixed my attention on the object of it.

Though the day appeared to be far advanced, he was just out of bed, and sitting at breakfast, in all the luxury and state of royalty. When he had swallowed a dish or two of tea, with evident disrelish, "What shall I do with myself to-day? (said he to himself rubbing his head, and stretching in listless lassitude) I am quite sick of this insipid kind of life, still plodding, plodding on in the same dull, tasteless round, without any variety, any thing to expect, or even wish for. It is not to be borne." —

Then musing for some moments, "What must they do whose stinted fortunes deny them the gratification even of the few desires they have, when the highest affluence cannot procure me any satisfaction? — and yet they evidently enjoy a happiness which I am a stranger to. There is something in this, more than I can comprehend. I will think of it some other time."

Turning then to his man, "What day of the week is this, Thomas?"

"Sunday, my lord."

"Sunday! Order the horses. I will take a ride this fine morning. — And what shall I do with myself the rest of the day? — Let me consider! Did not I promise to dine with her grace, and go with her to Mrs. Squeakum's concert, and afterwards to lady Modish's rout, and then return and spend the evening with the Duke! — Pshaw! I am surfeited with music; the very thought of it makes my head ache, — And for routs, they are still worse. To be squeezed and crowded among a parcel of people of all sorts and conditions, who come together merely to make malicious remarks, and pick each other's pockets! It is intolerable, — I am tired, quite tired of them all; of myself, and every thing in the world. — That is right. Now I think of picking pockets, let me see how I came off last night, at the club!"

The

Then pulling a card out of his pocket, "Aye! here it is. What a black list! *Lord Palmwell* 1000 — *his Grace* 500 — *Sir John* 200 — *Mr. Shuffler* 1500 — *Capt. Gamble* 2000 — beside all the money I had about me. Death! This is too much. There must be some management in it, that I should always lose! I positively will not go among them any more."

He was interrupted in these agreeable meditations by the entrance of a servant. "My lord, (said he) the groom has sent an express, to know if your lordship has made any bets on your new horse, and what particular directions you please to give about his running to-morrow, if your lordship does not design to see him start yourself; and to let your lordship know, that the mare, which he told your lordship he was under some apprehensions of, is to be sold; so that if your lordship pleases to buy her, you may be sure of the horse's winning."

"To-morrow! Aye. Send him word, that I will be there. And, do you hear? order the post-coach, and send to *Mr. Shuffler*, *Capt. Gamble*, and *Sir John*, and let them know I go directly, and shall be glad of their company. And tell *Rackum* I want him. — I have never seen that horse run yet, though he cost me so high a price: and this is the last king's plate of this year. I must not miss seeing him now by any means."

"My lord, (continued the servant) here is a messenger from his Grace's gentleman of the horse, to acquaint your lordship that the sale of the stud is fixed for to-morrow, and cannot be put off as was intended. He says they are all to go without reserve."

"All, does he say? then I must be there. There are several *tip top* things among them, which I would not be without on any account. You need not order the coach; send the groom word, that he may do as he sees proper about the mare. I can't be there myself."

"My lord, (said another servant, who entered just then) *Mr. Connoisseur* is below; he says your lordship ordered him to send up his name. And *Mr. Stanza* — he would have denied him, but he says he has business of importance."

"Aye! of importance to him, I doubt not — Let him come up. As I have nothing else to do, their business is my business."

nonsense may divert me." — Then stretching again and giving a long yawn, he arose from the table, which was directly removed, and walked a turn or two about the room.

As soon as the gentlemen entered, "Your servant Mr. *Connoisseur*! (said his lordship) Mr. *Stanza*, what news from *Parnassus*? With what new inspiration have the Muses indulged their votary?

"My lord, (returned the former, with a mysterious air, before the poet had time to scan his syllables for a reply) when you can spare me a moment's private audience, I have something to communicate to your lordship, that you will find worthy of your attention."

"Mr. *Stanza*, (said his lordship) if you'll take that new play that lies in the window, and look it over in the next room, I shall be glad to hear your opinion of it."

The poet made a bow of assent; and taking up the book with a contemptuous smile, retired, not a little offended at his being obliged to give place to a mechanic.

"Well, Mr. *Connoisseur*! and what is this important secret?"

"My lord, it is an important secret, I assure you. Your lordship may remember I have told you that gentlemen of judgment, who had spent several years visiting the cabinets of the curious in every part of *Europe*, out of which he had found means, at a very great expence, to procure many of the most admired pieces was daily expected home with his valuable collection. Now, my lord, this gentleman is just arrived; and we have had a constant correspondence with him all the time he has been abroad, for it was chiefly by me he was directed in the choice of what he bought —

"How! were you abroad too along with him? I do not know that." —

"No, no, my lord! I was not with him; but he did not prevent my being able to direct him. For your lordship must know, that there is a regular correspondence established between all the lovers of *virtu* in *Europe*, by which means we are as intimately acquainted with every thing in each other's country as in our own

so that I could give him my opinion what was proper for him to purchase in every place where he went, as well as if I was upon the spot with him. — As I was saying. This gentleman no sooner landed, than he sent me immediate notice, upon which I went directly to him; and as I am well acquainted with your lordship's fine taste, I have by much entreaty prevailed upon him to let you have several of the most capital pieces in his collection, before he exhibits them to the public for sale; for which purpose your lordship may have a sight of them privately to-morrow, if you please, when I will wait upon you, to point out the proper ones to compleat your noble collection, and prevent your being imposed upon in the price; not that any price can in reality be too high for such master-pieces of art."

"To-morrow, do you say? Can it not be put off for a day or two? I am engaged to-morrow."

"My lord, that is impossible. All the *Virtuosi* in England will know of his arrival in twenty-four hours, and then it will be out of his power to oblige your lordship; and you will lose an opportunity never to be retrieved."

"Well then, I think I will go. Here, *Thomas*, bid *William* go to his Grace's to-morrow, and buy whatever he likes; I cannot go myself."

"I hope your lordship approved of the bargains I made for you at the last sale; (continued *Connoisseur*) some of the landscapes came high; but they are very fine, very fine indeed, and will make a noble appearance in your lordship's gallery. Are they put up yet, my lord?"

"Eh! Egad I never once thought of them. Do you know any thing of those pictures, *Thomas*?"

"My Lord, the upholsterer nailed them up on the garret-stair-case; he said, they were not fit for the gallery by any means."

"He is an ignorant puppy, and deserves to be turned off for presuming to disobey my directions. How could he know any thing of paintings! — My lord, — your lordship may depend on my judgment. They are capital pieces. The garret-stair-case! ignorant, impudent blockhead!"

"Hah! hah! hah! This is exalting into degradation, I think. But I will look at them myself when I am at leisure, and see that justice is done them."

"At what hour shall I call upon your lordship in the morning?"

"About twelve. Suppose we take *Stanza* with us. A poet should be a judge of painting. Call him in."

"A judge of painting! Hah! hah! hah! a most excellent one, truly! How should such low-lived creatures have judgment in things they have not even an opportunity of seeing. They never travel to improve their taste, and enrich their minds by studying the excellencies of the foreign schools. They have no notion of any thing beyond an English daub. I must beg your lordship not to take notice of this affair to any one, as it would entirely ruin the sale of the whole collection, and especially to such a fellow as that, whose vanity at such an undeserved honour would make him blab it directly. A poet never kept a secret yet. Their very profession is to prate. I beg your lordship will not mention a syllable of it to him."

Saying this, the lover of *virtu* took his leave; and meeting Mr. *Stanza*, as he was coming in, they saluted each other in the most polite and friendly manner.

CHAP. II.

Success no proof of merit. The impropriety of being pleased against rule. A curious account of the great advantages of the ancient drama. Painters not judges of poetry. — A capital defect in the designs of two famous architects, with the wonderful effect of a broken window.

"WELL, Mr. *Stanza*, (said his lordship) what is your opinion of that play? do not you think it has a great deal of merit?"

"My lord, (answered the poet with a smile) I should be very cautious of differing in opinion with one of your lordship's judgment and taste; but I imagine you can-

not be serious in your approbation of this — this — this play, if you please to call it so; for, indeed, it might as justly be called any thing else."

"How, sir! and do not you approve of it? I should be glad to hear your reasons for disliking a piece that has had such uncommon success."

"Success, my lord! — Success, at present, is a very poor proof of merit. The taste of these times is too low and gross for works of true excellence. As to this, it is a meer *farrago* of imperfections and faults. It is defective in the three great unities, and wants the moral majesty of a chorus to give it dignity and importance."

"I do not know what it wants; but this I am sure of, that it affects my passions strongly, and gives me pleasure which I am not able to describe; and where this is done, I do not see any necessity for these unities, or any thing else. That is all I desire."

"I am sorry to hear it, my lord; very sorry to hear that you should have submitted your own better judgment to a corrupted taste, so far as to be pleased against rule. If your lordship will do me the honour to peruse this play, which I have written exactly on the plan of the ancients, and made bold to dedicate to your lordship's patronage, you will soon see the impropriety of being pleased by these modern monsters, and the advantage of adhering to those rules which you seem to make so light of."

The unities save the poet the fatigue of inventing, and the reader of attending to unforeseen incidents and surprises; and for the chorus! it is the best *succedaneum* that ever was thought of to supply the place of imagination; for, when the writer, at any time, can say no more in the characters of the drama, what is easier than to make the chorus throw in a string of moral sentiments, which can be picked out of any book? and so the whole goes on without trouble. I have thus explained to your lordship the necessity of observing the laws of the drama, which you will farther find illustrated in this piece."

"I am sorry *Connoisseur* is gone; he would have been a proper person to decide this matter. Poetry and painting are sister-arts."

"Some people, my lord, have thought proper to call them so; but with what justice any one who considers the difference between sense and imagination can judge. Every poet, indeed, is most certainly a painter; that is, his descriptions strike the imagination as strongly as if the objects were actually present to the senses. But no painter, I believe, can claim an equal share of the poet's praise, as the utmost excellence of his art is confined to one narrow scene, and displayed on materials not only subject to accident, but also to necessary decay; whereas the labours of the poet laugh at time, and look up to eternity, and are capable of being multiplied in such a manner as to be enjoyed by millions in the same moment. Where do the works of *Apelles*, and all the famous painters of antiquity, live now, but in the poet's lays? They confer that immortality which makes the others so proud; though, puffed up by present praise, they pretend to put themselves on a level with their benefactors. In a word, my lord, as much, indeed ten thousand times as much, as the eye can see farther than the hand can reach, is poetry above painting."

Just as the poet had concluded this laboured panegyric upon his art, a servant informed his lordship that Mr. *Architrave* waited below. "Bid him come up," (said his lordship, and then turning to *Stanza*) you assert the honour of the Muses with such spirit, that you deserve to be their peculiar favourite."

"Your lordship is pleased to compliment. Will your lordship give me leave to lay this humble imitation of the ancients at your feet? Your patronizing it will not be a dishonour to your taste, in the opinion of the learned. If your lordship will please to look at it —"

"Some other time, when I am leisure; at present I am engaged."

"My lord! the dedication only; — it will not take up a moment, if you will give me leave."

"Sir, I really am engaged; but any other time —"

The poet saw it was in vain to press any farther, and was going away with a look of the highest disappointment and dejection; which his lordship observing, "Stay, Mr. *Stanza*; (said he) though I cannot read your

your dedication at this time, it is but just that I should make the muse some return for her compliment. A few pieces perhaps may not be unacceptable."——

"My lord, (answered the poet in evident transport) your lordship's most noble munificence merits all the muse can do; nor shall her grateful voice be silent."

With these words he made his lordship a most respectful obeisance, and retired with an happy heart.

Before he could make any reflections on the sudden change which the money so manifestly made in the poet's looks, a person entered with a roll of paper under his arm. Mr. *Architrave*, (said his lordship) where have you been this age? I thought you were dead."

"My lord, (answered the other, unfolding his roll) I have been employed in obeying your lordship's commands, which it was impossible to finish sooner. Here is the plan you ordered me to draw; which, if properly executed, will do credit not only to your lordship's taste and magnificence, but also be an honour to your country, where the true beauties of architecture have hitherto been most unhappily neglected. We have never had any eminent masters in ~~that most noble art~~ among us here. Never one."

"How, sir! Never any eminent architects in England? I have heard *Jones* and *Wren* spoken of in a very different manner in *Rome*."

"*Jones* and *Wren*, my lord, were well enough for their times, and in some things; but their taste is quite exploded now. Why, my lord, there is not one *bow-window* in all their designs. Do but look over this plan, and consider the various beauties in all its parts; they will give you a proper notion of *Jones* and *Wren*. No! no! they are not the thing! *Jones* and *Wren* would not do now a-days. You see, my lord, the boldness of this design. It is quite new. I scorn to borrow from any one. To the simplicity of the ancient style I have added the ornaments of the modern, and so blended the better parts of both. Observe the uniformity, and yet the variety in this noble front; the strength and beauty of the composition; and then the bow-window at the end! No building can be complete without a bow-window. Does not your lordship think it has a very fine effect?"

" I think it has a very reverend effect, if you will, (answered his lordship, who had been humming a tune, and never cast his eye upon the paper till that moment) and makes the house look just like a church. And what will the execution of this plan come to?"

" My lord, I have not yet made the estimate; but I know it will be nothing to your lordship's fortune. Not above thirty or forty thousand pounds, or some such matter. But will not your lordship please to examine it a little? I am confident you will like it; it is exactly in the present taste, in every part."

" I do not doubt it, sir. The nobleman who recommended you to me, assured me of your abilities; and I can depend upon his judgment. At present I am not at leisure."

" Your lordship has had a proof of my abilities; that magnificent house which I have built for you."—

" Very true! I had quite forgot that. Not indeed that I can form any opinion from that house, as I have never yet had time to see it since it was finished."

The steward, whom his lordship had sent for, coming in just then, "*Rackum*, (continued he) Mr. *Architrave* will give you an estimate of the expence of a new house which I design to build yonder on the green; and do you set the people about it as soon as you can."

The steward made a bow; and *Architrave*, imagining his lordship might be upon business, took his leave.

CHAP. III.

No bag without a bottom. The advantage of keeping a good resolution. An evening spent in taste, and a jaunt to BATH. The misfortune of wanting something to wish for ; with some uncommon reflections in praise of what no one desires to possess.

"MY lord, (said the steward) I was told your lordship wanted me."

"Aye! — But I have forgot for what, — Yes! here, take this card, and let me have draughts to discharge the several sums marked upon it; and as much more for my own use."

"My lord, I most humbly beg your lordship's pardon for the liberty I am going to take. It is impossible for any fortune to support the expence at which your lordship lives at present; absolutely impossible! All the money which was saved during your lordship's minority is gone; and though your income is so very great, I must beg leave to tell you money does not come in fast enough to defray the ordinary expences of your immense household, without the addition of these other demands. I really do not think there is so much as this in your banker's hands; and if your lordship draws it out thus, I shall be at a loss to find a supply for your necessary occasions."

"Not money enough! — That is impossible; absolutely impossible! I have never spent half that money. Do not tell me any such thing."

"My lord, here is the account. I do not desire to have my word taken for it. I have vouchers for every shilling. I only wish that too many of them were not of this kind. Will your lordship please to look at them?"

"No, I cannot at present; I am not at leisure. Some other time, perhaps, I may. Let me have this money directly; and if matters really are as you say, you must consider of some method of putting them on a better footing; for I shall leave it all to you."

"Your lordship mentioned something about building an house before that gentleman; I presume you were not serious!"

"Serious! — Yes. I design to have it begun upon directly."

"My lord, I am afraid I take too great liberty; but I cannot help it. I have long wanted an opportunity of speaking to your lordship, but you were never at leisure. The other house that your lordship began so long ago has been at a stand for a considerable time for want of money to carry it on; and to begin another now would look like madness. I beg your lordship's pardon; but I think it my duty to inform you of these things."

"Well! well! I will think on them some other time. Make haste with that money against I am dressed; it is time for me to go out."

His lordship then, as great haste as he was in, found leisure to resign his person into the hands of his valet de chambre for an hour; and Sir *John* and the *Captain* calling upon him just as the important business of dressing was ended, he paid them their demands; and forgetting all his resolutions to the contrary, as well as his engagements elsewhere, went directly with them to the club.

The manner in which he spent the rest of the evening and the night there, where luxury had exhausted all her invention to provoke sated appetite, and force nature into the grossest excesses, is beyond description. I shall only say, that his usual luck attended him, and he lost all his money to the same set; his vexation at which aggravated the effects of his debauch, and made him a little sickish when he awoke next afternoon.

The first thought that came into his head as soon as he got up, was to go to a celebrated water drinking place, at a considerable distance, where the sick and idle resort, with equal eagerness, for health and pleasure.

Accordingly he sent for a particular gentleman whose company he was fond of, and set off directly, attended by a retinue equal to that of a sovereign prince, without ever thinking of his other appointments.

On his arrival there, he plunged at once into all the fashionable follies of the place; but he had ran through them so often before, that they had lost the charms of novelty, and could afford him no pleasure. He therefore returned home as precipitately as he went, though without any determined scheme, any thing even in hope or expectation that could promise him satisfaction.

The consequence was natural. He fell directly into his former course of life, driven about, like a feather in the wind, by every puff of vanity, without any impulse or power of his own to direct him.

There was something so dreadfully wretched in such a life, that I turned from him in horror. "What is your opinion now?" (said my guide with a mortifying smile) "Do you imagine that riches alone are sufficient to confer happiness?"

"I am convinced, and ashamed of my error;" (said I) "but yet the very confutation of it has opened a most valuable secret to me. I see that poverty is in reality the greatest blessing of life, or rather, indeed, the only one that can make it at all tolerable. It engages the attention in pursuits which take it off from the inevitable miseries of nature. By delaying the gratification of the appetites it makes them keen, and makes that gratification a pleasure. By preventing surfeit, it preserves the power of enjoyment. In a word, it keeps the soul awake with expectation, and enlivens it with hope, without which life is a burden too heavy to be borne; the highest enjoyment soon palling upon the sense, and making the anxiety of new pursuits necessary to dissipate the pain of disappointment. Thus the reputed wretch, who begs from door to door, is really happier than he whose riches put every gratification in his power; the hope of getting a morsel of bread to appease the cravings of hunger, keeping the attention of the former fixed upon one point, while, for want of any particular object to wish for, the other sinks into listless indifference, and loses his relish for all.

"But though I have been disappointed of the pleasure I proposed in this last view, it has opened another to me, which I hope will be more successful.

"The

"The gentleman whom his lordship took with him in his fantastic expedition to the water-drinking place, seemed to enjoy every thing with such pleasure, as afforded the strongest contrast to the tasteless apathy of the other. With your permission, I will observe him a little longer. I imagine I shall not be disappointed as I was before."

My guide smiled; and, giving a nod of assent, I directly turned my eyes to the person of whom I had been speaking.

CHAP. IV.

History of Mr. CHAMELION. The pleasure and advantages of the friendship of the Great. Episode of Monsieur FRIPPEU and his lady opens some secrets not very pleasing to the hero of the tale.

THERE was something so prepossessing in his looks, so irresistably engaging in his manner, together with the great advantage of a striking figure, that it was impossible to behold him without regard; but, upon a nearer view, that ease and happiness of heart which had particularly attracted my notice, did not seem so genuine and sincere as I had at first imagined.

He was dressed in the most elegant and becoming taste, just ready to go out, and waited only for the return of a servant, whom he had sent with a letter. "It is impossible (said he to himself as he walked back and forward in his room) that I should be disappointed. His Grace has often assured me of his friendship, and wished for such an opportunity as this of doing me service. It is impossible that I should be disappointed."

While he was pleasing himself with these reflections the servant returned with an answer to his letter. His eyes sparkled with joy, and he opened it with an eagerness that shewed the height of his hopes; but they were soon depressed. He had scarce cast his eye on the contents, when a gloomy cloud overcast his whole countenance.

nance. The letter fell out of his hand; and sinking back into a chair, "What an unfortunate wretch am I, (said he, shrugging up his shoulders, and lifting up his hands and eyes to heaven) to let a false delicacy thus destroy my fairest hopes! Why did not I go to him the moment the place was vacant? Persons in his exalted station have their minds taken up with so many cares of greater consequence, it is no wonder they should forget the connections of private friendship."

Then taking up the letter, "*Extremely glad* — (said he, repeating some parts of it aloud, as he read it over) *too late — but yesterday — any other occasion — sincere friend —*."

Just as he concluded, a thundering at the door announced the arrival of a visiter; and instantly rushed in a young nobleman of the first rank, who running up to the gentleman, "Dear *Frank*, (said he) I am glad I have found you at home. You must come with me directly. A party of us have this minute taken a frolick to go and beat up his lordship's quarters in the country for a few days; and you will just make up our set. Come along with me; your servants will overtake us where we dine."

"My dear lord, (answered the other, as soon as he was permitted to speak) I am afraid I cannot possibly have the honour of attending you. Some business —"

"Psha! damn business. What have we to do with business? I say, you shall come. We should have no pleasure without you. If you want money, I can supply you till you return. Come along."

"I am much obliged to your lordship; that is not the question. Unluckily I am engaged."

"Never mind that. Say I forced you away. Lay the blame on me. For you must, and shall come." — Saying which, he dragged him away, scarce giving him time to tell his servants where to follow him.

The whole expedition was of a piece with the manner of their setting out; a continuance of rambling, riot, and noise; till sick of the fatigue, and some new whim running into their heads, they returned home in as great hurry as they went.

I could

I could easily see that the person whom I particularly attended to, was far from enjoying such a scene, and gave in to it merely in compliance with his company, against his own better taste and judgment. This made me expect that I should see him to more advantage on his return home, when he should be at liberty to pursue his own inclinations; but I soon found, to my great disappointment, that I had been too hasty in forming my opinion of him; his whole life being one continued round of dangling after those whom fortune had placed in a superior rank.

Such a prostitution was so gross, that I was soon sick of it; which my guide perceiving, "You find the consequence (said he) of judging from appearances. You thought this person happy because of the serenity of his countenance, and the relish with which he seemed to enjoy every thing that had the name of pleasure; but this was all grimace, affected only to make him agreeable to the company whom he has devoted himself to, in the manner you have seen.

"It may not be improper to give you some account of his motives for a conduct which seems so strange.

"His name is *Chamelion*. He was born to a moderate fortune, and entered into the notice of the public with the advantage of every accomplishment, both natural and acquired, which could attract esteem; but it is the proper use which makes the blessing. These advantages, which in a much lower degree have laid the foundation of many a splendid fortune, by an unhappy misapplication have been the cause of his ruin; for, instead of improving so favourable an introduction by prudence and care, and applying himself to any of the various pursuits in which the good opinion they gained him might have been of real service, he became intoxicated with the flattering reception he met in the gay world, and, neglecting every thing else, gave himself up absolutely to idleness and dissipation.

"The expence of such a life far exceeded his fortune; but he disregarded this, believing the professions of friendship which were made him by his companions, and flattering himself that they would make him am-

amend

recommends for the sacrifice of his time and fortune, by procuring him some lucrative employment, that should enable him always to live among them. How just this expectation was, you will soon have an opportunity of seeing."

On this I turned again to *Chamælion*, the crisis of whose fate I now perceived to draw on apace. The next morning after his return, he went to pay a visit to one of his noble friends, who had not been upon the party in the country.

After some common chat, "I am going this morning," said the lord, "to thank my good friend his Grace, for a very unexpected favour. You remember the parson's daughter, whom you admired so much when you were in the country with me last summer. After you left me, want of something else to do, made me e'en take it in my head to make love to her, which the tender turtle received so kindly, that she soon made me a return of all the happiness in her power.

"There is nothing so surfeiting as intriguing with your loving ones. I was soon tired of my fond *Phyllis*, and glad to fly from her to town. But that gave me only a short relief; I had not been in town a week, before she stowed herself in a stage-coach and followed me. This threw me into the greatest distress. Her old father had been my tutor; and though I cannot say I am shilling the better for all the pains he pretended to take with me, he acquitted himself so much to the satisfaction of my wise father, that, when he came to die, he made him a trustee to his will, and left him such power over me, that I cannot raise one shilling on my estate beyond my annual income, without his express consent. You may judge by this what a fine situation my elopement threw me into; especially as I was just then soliciting her father to let me raise a sum of money, to discharge my debts of honour, which you know are pretty considerable.

"It was in vain to argue with the foolish baggage. She fell into fits, pretended love; and at last stopped my mouth entirely by declaring herself with child.

"While I was in the height of this perplexity, his Grace happened to call upon me; and enquiring what

was

was the matter, for I could not conceal my uneasiness. I e'en told him the whole affair; upon which he said, in the most friendly manner, that he knew but one way to extricate me; which was, if I could prevail upon her to marry any person whom it might be thought she had run away to, he luckily had a place, then in his gift, which would be an handsome provision for them. You may be sure, I thanked him most sincerely for so great a piece of friendship, and, the moment he was gone, summoned *Frippeau*, my valet de chambre, and made him the proposal, who readily embraced it, and soon prevailed upon her to agree to it also; on which they were directly married, and we concerted matters so, that I not only appeared innocent to her father, but also have the merit of providing for her by my interest with his grace, which I took care to place to the account of my regard for him; so that I think he cannot refuse me any thing I ask of him; and this very morning the bride-groom has been with me, to let me know he has taken possession of his place."

It is impossible to describe the situation of *Chamælion* during the latter part of this story. Resentment, shame, and rage swelled in his heart, and tortured every feature of his face. Suppressing them, however, as well as he could. "What place, my lord, (said he) has the happy man got?"

"Why, that there place which I have so often heard you say you should like. Egad! I think I should have articed for a share. The rascal could never have raised his expectations quarter so high otherwise. At least I shall claim a right to renew my acquaintance with his lady, if ever I should have a mind. Hah! hah! hah!"

"And pray, my lord, (continued *Chamælion*) when did his grace confer this obligation on your lordship?"

"One day last week, — while you were in the country. But do not you think, *Frank*, that I have well got over this affair?"

"I could have told you something, my lord, (said the other, with a spiteful sneer which all his art was not sufficient to suppress) that would have lessened your anxiety about that fair lady."

"Aye!

"Aye! What was that? What do you know of her?"

"Only, my lord, that her love must certainly have been very violent for your lordship, when your servant could so readily prevail upon her to marry him. Hah! hah! hah!"

"Why, aye! that is very true. — But — but — but consider — consider — What else could she do?"

"And your lordship may add, that Monsieur *Frippeau* is a man of parts, and master of prevailing arguments. I see he has conducted his scheme cleverly."

"Eh! I do not understand you. His scheme! No. It was my proposal, not his."

"Yes, my lord, I perceive the proposal was your's; but the plan I have good reason to think was his."

"His! No, no; not at all. It was his Grace's. *Frippeau* knew nothing of the matter, till I informed him of it."

"Not directly of this, I grant you, my lord; but that he had formed some plan of the kind, I am very clear."

"How could that be? What should make you think so?"

"Because, my lord, he and this lady, to my certain knowledge, had a very good understanding long before the time you say you first made your addresses to her."

"A good understanding! What do you mean? Prig, speak plainer."

"I mean, my lord, that monsieur and madam had an amour; and that, instead of his marrying your ship's whore, and fathering your bastard, by a prudent participation of what he could well spare, he has the address to take in your lordship to provide for and his hopeful family. That is all I mean, my lord."

"An amour with her! Impossible! I am sure it could be no such thing. What can have put this nonsense into your head?"

"My lord, it was put into my head by my happening to catch the fond pair clasped in the folds of love one evening, in the arbour at the bottom of the garden."

"Sdeath! when was this?" —

"The very evening after we went into the country. I should have done you good to see how lovingly the turtles

turtles

turtles billed. The joy they expressed at meeting shewed that they had been well acquainted before."

"Damn their joy! But how the devil came you to tell me of this?"

"Because, my lord, she bribed me to secrecy by the same favour. Besides, I could never suspect that your lordship would have been made such a dupe of by a country-girl."

"Infamous bitch! And to pretend so much love for me all the while! But I will be revenged. I will have the scoundrel turned out directly, and let the whore's father know of all her tricks."

"And he will give you all the vexation he can in your affairs, in return for the share you have had in them. Nor is it in your power to turn out Frippen now. He has a patent for his place, and defies you."

"Confusion! What must I do?"

"Why, my lord, you must even go and return your thanks to his Grace for his great favour so worthily bestowed, and submit patiently to the abuse you have received, because it is not in your power to redress it."

Saying this he took his leave somewhat consoled for the ill treatment he had met with from his Grace, thinking that his lordship, who thought he had received the benefit of it, was still more abused than he.

CHAP. V.

Misfortunes multiply. A new method of engaging the assistance of the great. Common occurrences. CHAMBERLION breaks with his great friends rather unpolitely. His history concluded with some odd reflections.

SEVERELY as he felt this stroke, it was but a trifling to the misfortunes which began now to press in upon him. From his lordship's he went on his errand, to the person who had hitherto supplied him with money on a mortgage of his estate; but, to his unspeakable surprize, instead of complying with his demand, the scrivener told him very gravely, that

could not advance any more upon that security; and desired he would take measures for paying him off without delay, or he must foreclose the mortgage.

It is impossible to express the astonishment into which his speech threw him. As soon as he recovered himself a little, "Surely, sir, (said he) that estate must be worth considerably more than my debt to you. The year rent is eight hundred pounds a year; and the last year we settled I owed you but fourteen thousand pounds, interest and principle, since which I have not asked any more from you; so that you must certainly be mistaken. The estate is worth several thousands more."

"Look you, sir, (answered the scrivener) as you have always dealt with me like a gentleman, I will be in a point so far as to give one thousand pounds more; but that is on condition, that you execute a sale of that estate to me directly; and that is by five hundred more than I would give any other man I deal with."

"I am much obliged to you for your friendship, sir; but I think that fifteen thousand pounds is rather too much for eight hundred a year."

"Why, there it is now. You gentlemen who have estates in land think there is nothing like them; but we know the contrary. Money, money, sir, is the thing. I can honestly make ten per cent. or perhaps more, on my money, every day I live now; and this without being plagued with tenants breaking, and repairs, and taxes, and I do not know how many vexations which attend landed estates. No! no! Money, Money is the thing."

"Ten per cent! Aye, that you can, and more to certain knowledge, or my debt could never have amounted so high by some thousands. But this kind of thing signifies nothing. Tell me directly what is the sum that you will give me?"

"Sir, I cannot give any more than I have said; and I am of that you must pay all the costs of making the conveyance too."

"Then, sir, you never shall have my estate, you may be assured. I am not reduced to submit to such iniquitous extortions yet."—With which words he turned about

about and left the room, sensible that it was to no purpose to attempt using any arguments with one of his profession.

He was well enough acquainted with the world, to know that the scrivener would never have made such a declaration till he had every thing prepared to put it in execution, and consequently that his own situation admitted not of a moment's delay.

Accordingly, he went directly to a gentleman who had often hinted a desire to purchase his estate, if ever it should be to be sold, as he plainly foresaw it must be at the end; with whom, in the present agitation of spirits, he concluded a bargain in a very few words, that left him without a foot of property upon earth.

The forming a resolution, be it what it will, is a relief to a mind in distress, by taking off the attention from that distress, and fixing it on the means of executing the resolution.

From the moment he determined to sell his estate, he enjoyed a tranquillity which amid all his pleasures had long been a stranger to; and though he was sensible that he should have but a very poor pittance remaining to found his future hopes upon, when all his debts were paid, the thought of disappointing the miser's base design gave him such pleasure that he scarcely attended to his own ruin; or, if he had any sense of it, the illusion that had drawn it upon him, and upon which he still continued, took off half its horrors.

"When my friends see (said he) that I stand in need of their assistance, they will give it without even putting me to the pain of making application: and I have money enough due to me among them, to support me as usual, till some such opportunity offers: all cannot be so basely insincere as his Grace."

Supported by this hope, he went to spend the evening among them with his wonted spirits: but the consciousness of his desperate circumstances made his apprehensions so delicate, that he construed the common pleasantries of his companions into personal insults, and left them abruptly, as much surprised at his behaviour as he was offended at theirs.

But they were not long at a loss to account for it. One of the club, who had been on the same errand himself that day with the lawyer who drew the conveyances of the other's estate, and learned the affair from him, coming in just after he had gone away in that odd manner, directly told them the whole affair, heightened with the additional embellishments of his own good-nature, such as the purchase of his estate's not having paid half his debts, and his being reduced now to a condition worse than beggary.

This opened a field for curious speculations. Instead of regretting a ruin, which they had themselves been the occasion of, they all ran out into the grossest ridicule, and severest invectives, against his foolish vanity, pretending to live upon an equality with persons of superior rank and fortune; the most extravagant of the whole set, and those especially whose circumstances were reduced nearest to the level with his, declaiming most in the praise of prudence and œconomy, and being most against him for the opposite vices.

The conclusion of all was, that it would no longer be proper for them to admit him into their company: as forbidding him directly might too probably be attended with consequences they did not chuse, they unanimously resolved to take the safer method of threatening him with a coldness, that to one of his delicacy would not fail to answer the same end, without exposing him to such danger.

As for him, the manner in which he passed the remaining part of the night is too horrid for description. After cursing his own folly and their baseness, till his spirits were quite exhausted, he at length bethought himself, that the particular expressions which had given him such pain were in the common stile of their conversation, and in all probability without any personal application to him, as it was scarce possible, that they could have received any account of so recent a transaction.

The consolation which this thought gave him, enabled him to take some rest; so that when he awoke, he retired to the usual place, in pretty good spirits: but he was only like a gleam of sun-shine between two clouds; the behaviour of his companions, in consequence

quence of the generous resolution of the night before, soon removing every doubt of their meaning and design.

Stung to the soul at this, he started up, and looking at them with the fierceness of desperation ; “ I plainly said he, in an haughty tone, that my ruin is no secret, nor am I at a loss to account for the prudential motive of this behaviour ; but you are mistaken, my worthy friends, if judging of me by yourselves, you think I mean enough to solicit, or receive any favour from you. Most of this company are in my debt, both for money won and lent. The payment of that is all I require, and what I will insist on. If I owe any of you any thing, it be demanded now, as this is the last time I shall ever come among you.”

The first word he spoke caused an universal silence, nor were any of them very ready to break it when he ended, but sat looking at each other as at a loss what to say, and expecting who should speak first.

This behaviour almost disarmed his rage, and turned it into contempt ; casting his eye therefore round him with ineffable disdain, “ I give you time, said he, consider of my demand till to-morrow, when, if I have not a satisfactory answer, I shall apply personally to each in another manner.” — Saying which, he flung up his hat, and went out of the room.

The threat implied in these last words influenced some of them whose debts were but small to pay him : but the greater part, sheltering themselves in the privileges of their rank, gallantly thought proper to take no notice of his demand.

But this was not their best protection : provoked as he was at the baseness of their behaviour, his pride would not permit him to repeat a demand, which, from the present circumstances might be imputed to necessity. Accordingly, tired of a place where every object he saw upbraided him with his folly, he purchased a commission in the army with the poor remains of his fortune, and sought to silence the reproaches of his own mind by the tumults and horrors of war.

Of all the instances of human folly which I have seen, this affected me most. “ O gracious spirit !

with an heavy sigh) how wretched is the state of man, that the finest endowments of mind are not sufficient to secure him from falling into this inexplicable labyrinth! where no land-mark to warn him from the danger? no clue to guide his steps in safety through the giddy maze?"

"The brightest endowments (answered he) serve only to make folly more conspicuous, and aggravate the pain of ruin by reproach, except they will submit to the direction of prudence.

"But the contrary is too often the case. The vivacity which results from great parts is above stooping to self-restraint, especially from a virtue that appears to be wholly negative.

"Hence it is that you see the greatest follies are generally committed by men of the greatest genius; as, on the other hand, the most solid advantages are obtained by moderate abilities, when directed by that unerring guide. Of the former you have seen a striking instance in this person, and every view of life makes it necessary to give any of the latter.

"As to him, there is no species of folly more exclusively fatal than that which proved his ruin. Every man, who, listening to the allurements of idleness, neglects to improve the present moment, and depends on chance to bring on another day that which application might procure him now, is guilty of it. All have the means of rational success within their power when they set out in life, and the many who miscarry owe their misfortune mostly to the want of applying those means properly.

CHAP. VI.

are character. Description of a lady's closet. Pleasing meditations; with one side of a remarkable conversation. The history of Cælia and Strephon. Masqued batteries most dangerous in love as well as war.

WHILE the spirit was making these reflections, I happened to cast my eye upon a female whose appearance

appearance raised my curiosity to take more particular notice of her.

Though she was descending fast into the vale of years, and time's inexorable hand had robbed her charms of their bloom, there was a sweetness and sensibility in her looks, and elegance and grace in her whole form, which made the very ruins of beauty look lovely, and were impossible to be beheld without the tenderest emotions.

She was sitting in a favourite closet, the first view of which suggested an idea of the owner's character. It looked into a spacious garden that hung over the banks of a silver stream. At the lower end a variety of evergreens and flowering shrubs formed a number of little arbours, and spread a fragrance through the air that disposed the heart to softness, and filled it with delight. Beyond them a row of venerable oaks, bounded the view, among which the stream, stealing insensibly from the sight, made the whole prospect most romantick and grand. The windows were set out with flower-pots of the finest china. On the ceiling was painted the story of *Apollo* and *Daphne*, by a master's hand. A large book-case, carved in the *Chinese* taste and highly gilt, covered each end of the closet, and displayed a complete collection of all the plays, poems, and romances in the modern languages, which treated love as a science, and heighten its pleasures by the power of imagination. A glass that reached from the floor to the ceiling was placed against the pier between the windows, and, corresponding with one of equal size on the opposite side of the closet, served to shew the whole perfectly at one view; and a variety of masquerade habits, for the characters of nymphs, nuns, shepherdesses and queens, with all their different insignia, hung up in regular order on each side of the door, and made the whole of a piece.

She sat at a table placed before one of the windows with a huge folio open before her, on which she leaned her elbow as she meditated on what she had been reading, with her head reclined upon her hand, and her eyes fixed upon the ceiling; her spectacles lay upon

on the book, to mark the place where she had stopped, and her snuff-box and handkerchief beside it.

After she had been musing thus for some minutes, Happy days (said she, with a sigh) when love and honour governed the world! when ceremony gave place to sincerity, and inclination went hand in hand with love! Why did I not live then? Why was my lot reserved for these dull iron times? I might have been a gentle shepherdess, and spent my blissful life with some selected faithful swain in sweet *Arcadian* vales, awaking with our tuneful pipes the slow-paced morn, when we used to tend our fleecy care; and slumbering away the sultry noon, clasped in each other's arms, in cool sequestered fragrant bowers, beside some purling stream, whose murmurs lulled each wearied sense to rest."

Then, taking a pinch of snuff, and rising from her chair, "Or else I might have been some beauteous nymphe, (continued she, as she walked with a majestick stride across the floor) whose fame had filled the world, and brought adoring princes to my feet." —

She was interrupted in these pleasing meditations by the entrance of a servant with a letter. Dismissing him with a nod, the moment she saw the well-known hand, and then kissing the direction, she opened the letter, and read it over in a perfect rapture.

"O *Strephon*! (said she, as soon as she had ended) how can I resist thy sweet persuasive tongue? Such eloquence sure never sued in vain! Yes, I will meet you. *Livia* will meet her *Strephon* with all the ardour of undiminished love."

When she had thus given vent to her transport, she sat down again very composedly to her beloved study; in which she continued till summoned unwillingly to her.

A lover's repasts are never long. As soon as she had taken an hasty meal, she set out with all the eagerness and expectation for the shady walk at the bottom of the garden. The throbbing of her heart, as she approached this scene most opportune for love, made her imagine she was waiting for some favourite swain, whom I expected to see clasp her immediately in his arms.

But though no such lover appeared, she seemed neither
 VOL. I. H ther

ther disappointed nor displeased. The moment she entered the walk, "I come, my dearest *Strepson*!" (said she, spreading her arms to embrace the empty air, and talking as if to some one present) your *Cælia*, punctual to your appointment, comes to spend a rapturous hour in conversation with her soul's beloved. Here will I lean upon your arm, and hearken to the music of your voice, as we walk along the flowery margin of this limpid stream. These conscious shades, the nymphs, and naiads of the stream and grove, shall witness for the purity of our passion."

And then again, as if replying to something he had said, "I own the force of what you urge. Persuasion hangs upon your tongue; and yielding nature pleads so strongly in your behalf, that virtue hardly can resist: but spare the panting suppliant, nor seek to triumph farther over a prostrate foe."—

—"How can you wrong me so? Fantastick honour! No! I despise the thought. Leave me the sacred substance, virtue, and I will chearfully give up the fading shadow, though censure pour forth all her inveterate rage against me."—

—"Exalted generosity! Then I am safe. Had you pressed farther I had been undone. My rebel heart was ready to revolt."—

In this rapturous flighty strain, she continued her imaginary conversation for just an hour, pausing at every period, as if for a reply, using all the gestures, and drawing the attention of one engaged in deep discourse: then taking leave, with the most passionate expressions of regard, she returned to her company, with whom she spent the rest of the evening in the highest spirits; and that she might preserve the loved idea full upon her mind, as soon as her maid left the room, sat up in her bed in the flannels of the night, and putting on her spectacles once more read over his dear letter before she could think of going to rest, and then put it carefully under her pillow to tempt delightful dreams.

There was something so unaccountable in the conduct of this lady, that, strongly as curiosity attached attention to such an extraordinary scene, I could scarcely

contai

contain myself to the conclusion of it; but was several times going to ask my guide what it could possibly mean.

He read my astonishment in my looks; and as soon as the drawing of her curtain closed the farce, "I see," said he, you are at a loss what to make of this woman's fantastick behaviour. It is a species of folly so little known in common life, that it has not yet been distinguished by any particular title; and will, therefore, be best understood by a short account of her life.

"She was born, as you see, with every advantage of beauty, rank, and fortune, which all received a higher lustre still from the uncommon endowments of her mind. So fair a morn presaged a cloudless day; and hope looked forward with assurance for a life of happiness and honour. But she soon fell from this envied height; and her misfortune was wrought by such unlikely means, that it seemed to have been designed on purpose as a punishment and check on human confidence and vanity."

"A gentleman, of whom it was hard to say, whether nature was more liberal to his mind or cruel to his person, unfortunately happened to fix his eyes upon her; and either from inclination, or to shew the power of lawit, by inspiring her with love, in despite of his deformity, directly marked her out for his addressee.

"Flattery is the incense always offered to female beauty, and love the only language which it hears: but whether did he think the proper weapon for beginning his attack. He was sensible that the former would only reflect reproach on his own unpleasing appearance, and dilute the success of the latter, if offered before art had obliterated the defects of nature.

He resolved, therefore, to proceed upon another plan; and accordingly, wherever he met her, instead of entertaining her with hackney'd fulsome compliments, unmeaning addressee, he affected to discover new beauties in her mind, which raised his attention above any thing else; and displayed the charms of his own understanding so delicately in the praise of hers, that she possibly became enamoured of his conversation, to such a degree as to be indifferent to all other.

" One favourable circumstance is often sufficient to remove the most disadvantageous opinion. The disgust which his deformity raised soon subsided, and her attention was so fixed upon the perfections of his mind, that she quite overlooked the defects of his form : this was a great advance ; but difficulties still as great remained, and which required the most consummate art to conquer. Virtue was the rule by which she guided all her steps, and Fanny the darling passion of her soul.

" But he was not at a loss how to proceed. As he had before avoided flattering her beauty, for fear of drawing contempt upon himself, so he now refrained from mentioning the very name of love, lest her virtue should take the alarm, and defeat his design. His conversation was entirely sentimental : and he never even glanced at sensual pleasure, but to shew his disapprobation of it.

" Such a conduct soon won the confidence of her unexperienced, unsuspecting heart : and there was something so flattering in the thought of being the selected friend of such a person, that she could not resist it, but gladly met his advances half way, and returned his professions with the most solid and boundless esteem.

" The transition from friendship to love is imperceptible, and seldom fails between the different sexes : but here the very means which had procured the former, at the same time seemed to preclude all hopes of the latter for ever.

" But if this disappointed his desires, it facilitated the gratification of his vanity ; to which his heart was no less a slave. Secure in the purity of her own heart, she was easily led into breaches of those unessential forms which custom has arbitrarily established as the inseparable shadows of virtue, and too many substituted in the place of the substance.

" Envy instantly sounded the alarm, blazoning the imaginary fall in the blackest colours, before the innocent victim of her rage was sensible that she made the least slip.

CHAP. VII.

The history of CÆLIA and STREPHON, continued.—An extraordinary method of holding conversation at a distance. People often pay for peeping. Love is a riddle;

THE effects of innocence and guilt often bear so near a resemblance as to be mistaken for each other. Provoked at such injustice, she thought it beneath her to pay any farther regard to the caprices of public opinion; and, conscious of her own innocence, piqued herself on persisting in what had been so basely misrepresented: but this imprudent pride was imputed to another cause; and she was said to be hardened by guilt into a defiance of shame.

"Her friend, who had designedly led her by the hand into this labyrinth, thought he now had a proper opportunity to unmask his whole design. Accordingly, he began to change the tenour of his discourse, and try to pervert her principles, or tempt her passions to rebel against them. He drew pleasure in the most alluring colours, and softened the horrors of vice by every specious artifice: arguing against the excellence of virtue from the general opposition of nature to its dictates; and, by a daring perversion of divine truth, attempting to prove the very necessities of guilt as the proper means to merit the rewards of innocence." But

"Though his tongue

"Dropp'd manna, and could make the worse appear

"The better reason; for his thoughts were low,"

She saw that "all was false and hollow," and refuting his arguments with an indignant asperity, convinced him that all attempts of the kind must ever prove in vain: nor was this disappointment so severe as may be imagined. Vanity had at least an equal share with desire in his original design against her; and age and infirmities had now so far cooled the latter, that he was easily contented with the gratification of the former.

"For this reason he readily agreed to a proposal of her's to hold an intercourse of soul, into which sense should never be admitted; and as it might not be in their

power to meet so often as they must desire each other's conversation, they settled rules for a correspondence by letter, which nothing should ever interrupt.

" From this time, to enable her to support the heavy weight of public censure and neglect, of which she now began to be sensible, she was obliged to have recourse to books; and the turn of her thoughts naturally suggested the choice you saw.

" Nothing is more dangerous than flying for relief from any distress to folly. The natural propensity of the mind to it is so strong, that the faintest shadow of encouragement from reason links them inseparably for ever. The pleasure she took in these books grew upon her insensibly, till she lost all taste for every other enjoyment: and the study of them wrought such a change in her mind, that she soon relaxed the rules of her correspondence, and descended to write like other mortals.

" How far this humour might have been improved, it is not fair to conjecture: perhaps, what was her friend's consolation before was her protection now. However, he keeps up his correspondence with all the ardour of desire; but as this change in the stile might seem to lead to a more material one in their conduct, should they meet frequently as before, he luckily thought of the fantastic expedient which you saw her put in practice of retiring each of them alone at an appointed time, to converse in the power of imagination as if together; and to give a consistency to their thoughts, the same letter which makes the assignation appoints the scene of it, and the subject of the conversation.

" There is nothing so extravagant or absurd but habit will reconcile; especially when it flatters any favourite passion. Ridiculous as this thought of holding an imaginary conversation must appear, she was so pleased with it, that it soon became her greatest entertainment; nor to this day will she suffer the most serious concerns of life to interfere with the enjoyment of it.

" Of this she has given instances, which have been attended with circumstances of so severe ridicule as must have cured any mind of such folly, that was not under

der an absolute infatuation. I will relate one, for the whimsical singularity of it.

" Soon after this method of conversing was settled between her and her friend, while her charms were still in all their glory, a nobleman of the first rank was so smitten with them, that he resolved to propose an union with her for life, concluding that the censures which had been levelled against her, and were now almost forgot, something more recent having given the tongue of scandal other employment, were only the effect of envy at her superior excellence.

" The first hint of his design was received with pleasure by all her friends; and he was even beginning to make some advances in her esteem, when an unlucky accident at once overcast so fair a prospect.

" As he was walking alone with her one morning in the garden, and striving to give his conversation such a turn as should introduce a declaration of his passion, as if by accident and without the painful formality of a direct address, a servant delivered her a letter, which in the absence of impatience, she instantly opened, without ever reflecting who was present.

" The pleasure she discovered in her looks while she was reading it raised his curiosity to know who her happy correspondent could be, for he saw the direction was in a man's hand; and an accident soon presented him an opportunity of gratifying it: for she had scarce ran the letter over, when recollecting the impropriety of what she had done, she hastily attempted to put it up, and making him an apology for such a breach of ceremony, resumed her former conversation; but with such an inconsistency and absence of mind as evidently shewed she was thinking of something else.

" But instead of putting the letter in her pocket, she had in her confusion dropped it on the ground, which he directly perceived; and the nature of his intentions making him think he had a right to take every method of gaining information in any thing that might affect his happiness in so delicate a point, he resolved if possible to avail himself of the accident, and get a sight of it. Accordingly he led her away to some company who were in another part of the garden; and as soon as he saw her

engaged in conversation, feigning an excuse of having dropped his handkerchief, went back in search of the letter, which he readily found; and opening it without hesitation, saw to his utter astonishment and confusion, that it contained the most rapturous exultations of successful love: for the further gratification of which, it appointed a meeting in the shady walk at the bottom of the garden that very evening.

It is easy to conceive his situation at this discovery. The first impulse of his rage was to find out the bold invader of his happiness, and sacrifice him to his just resentment, as he concluded that he could not be ignorant of his intended alliance with that deceitful wanton; but the difficulty was to discover who he was, for the letter was signed only with the fictitious name of *Strephon*; and he could not expect that she would inform him, should he charge her with her baseness, and demand his name.

“ But he was not long at a loss. He readily judged that she would be punctual to an assignation, which evidently gave her such pleasure. He therefore resolved to take no notice of what he had discovered; but to try if he could not by some means or other gain admittance into the garden, and conceal himself near the scene of appointment, so as to be able to detect them in such a manner as should deprive them of every colour of defence or extenuation, and justify the severity of his meditated revenge: and for fear the loss of the letter should alarm her, he laid it exactly in the place he found it; and turning short into another walk, had not gone many steps, when he saw her running with the utmost anxiety in her looks in quest of it, as he also perceived by the joy that sparkled in her eyes when she returned to the company, that she had found it.

“ The next part of his plot succeeded without difficulty: he readily got admittance in disguise at the back-door of the garden, as if to gratify common curiosity; and had not been many minutes in his concealment, when he saw her hasten to the place of assignation with all the eagerness and impatience of love.

“ He heard her hold her imaginary conversation in the

the same manner; and as it was impossible for him to comprehend what it meant, that very circumstance only doubled his anxiety to develope such a dark and unaccountable scene.

“But though he had not detected her in the flagrant manner he designed, his scheme was not entirely disappointed, as she had made the discovery he wanted, by her frequent repetition of her lover’s name in the course of her conversation. As soon, therefore as she retired, he resolved to go directly to him, and require an explanation of the whole affair: but what was his surprize to find that he had been confined to his room for many months by the gout, nor had a prospect of quitting it soon! He therefore thought that he should only make himself ridiculous by mentioning the motive of his visit, and so passed it off under the appearance of common ceremony.

CHAP. VIII.

Continued. — Perplexity worse perplexed. A slight prejudice of education opens a new scene of confusion. A curious account of a JUGGLER. He foils the Devil at his own weapons; but is surprised himself in the midst of his triumph.

THIS naturally encreased his perplexity. He now considered the affair as a master-piece of intrigue; the mystery of which he was determined, if possible, to discover. With this design he directly dispatched a trusty servant to try if he could find out among the servants of the other, whether there was any intercourse between them and that lady; who immediately returned with an account that scarce a day passed in which they sent not letters to each other in the most public manner; and particularly, which was the principal point of his enquiry, that her footman had received one for her that very morning.

“The astonishment into which this account threw him may be easily conceived. The avowed libertinism of this gentleman’s character gave him too just reason

to form the worst opinion of any intercourse with him; at the same time that the manner in which it was carried on seemed to contradict its being of an improper nature: but, as this might also be only a finesse, he resolved to try if he could not make use of it to confirm that very suspicion which it was devised to elude.

“Accordingly, the employed the same servant to corrupt the gentleman’s porter, by a considerable bribe, to let him have a sight of the next letter he received to send to her, which he solemnly promised to return so soon, that it should not be missed.

“The porter had had too much connection with the great to be proof to such a temptation. He gave the letter, and the nobleman had the farther astonishment to find, that it contained not only another assignation, but even spoke in raptures of the pleasures of the last.

“This involved him in tenfold darkness. He scarcely knew how to believe his senses; and began to consider whether the whole might not possibly be a dream. As soon as he recovered a little from his astonishment, he returned the letter; and prepared in the same manner as before to be a witness of this most surprizing scene, when upon seeing her former incomprehensible extravagancies, he directly concluded she was under the delusion of some fascination, and that the gentleman used more than natural means to bring her into this state, to serve some base purposes of his own.

“Full of this notion, which an unhappy prejudice of education, his imagination having been filled in his infancy with such horrors of witchcraft and incantation, as it was impossible for reason ever absolutely to get the better of, made him more readily give into, he slipped away unperceived by her, and running to the house, alarmed the whole family with a dreadful account of her being, at that very instant, under the dominion of an evil spirit.

“It is impossible to describe the consternation into which this story threw them all; especially the lady’s mother, who, in the weakness of extreme age, had resigned herself to the illusions of a set of pretended reformers, whose *method* was to fill the minds of their insinuated followers with imaginary terrors, that they might

the more easily mould them to their own iniquitous purposes. They stared at each other for some time, in all the ghastliness of affright, unable to speak a word: but knowing that the time of her *possession* would soon be at an end, and having observed before that no traces of it remained after the expiration of the appointed hour, desired that they would come out with him directly, and be witnesses of the truth of what he told them.

"On this, some of the boldest ventured with him, while the rest went piously to prayers, and coming upon her unperceived, over-heard her in high discourse, which they readily believed, his lordship's opinion, to be with an evil spirit, whose voice even some of them confidently asserted they heard talking to her, though he did not appear to their sight.

"As soon, therefore, as her taking leave of her imaginary companion made them think the spirit was withdrawn, and that they might approach her without danger, they all rushed upon her, and holding her fast, while her surprize deprived her of power to ask the reason of such treatment, hurried her directly into the house.

"It had happened, that while they were out upon this important expedition, her mother's ghostly guide had called in as usual, to enquire into the state of her conscience, and to exchange spiritual for bodily comforts. The sight of him filled them all with joy. "O Doctor, said the good old lady, you are come in a lucky moment." — And then wringing her hands, "My poor unhappy daughter! O doctor, the enemy has surprized her; the foul fiend has taken possession of her body! O my daughter, my daughter!" —

"As it was impossible to conceive what she meant, the doctor turned to another of the company, whose grief and affright had not so far overpowered her reason; who in a few words informed him of the whole affair. Though upon all occasions he assumed an appearance of the highest resolution which his pretended sanctity of life could inspire, his soul was secretly a slave to every error which conscious guilt could raise to startle the most bigotted superstition. Such a story, therefore, was far from being agreeable to him: however, as it bore not the least appearance of probability, and especially

ally as it was impossible for him to retreat now, without forfeiting his credit for ever, he resolved to hide his fears, and act his part in defiance of his conscience, as he had often done in other cases, be the consequence what it would.

"While he was forming this resolution, he stood with his hands and half-closed eyes raised to heaven, as if wrapt in mental adoration and prayer, to invoke the divine assistance: an attitude which he had practised often, whenever he wanted time to consider how he should extricate himself out of any difficulty, or carry on any glaring imposition, and he now fell into it mechanically. Then turning to the trembling matron, "Fear not, madam," said he, in a slow solemn voice, and with an air of importance, "the prayers of the faithful are able to prevail over all the powers of Satan. Thy daughter shall be restored: my spirit hath received assurance, and longs to undertake the contest. Now shalt thou behold the prince of darkness put to flight, and all his strength defeated by the word of feeble man: but faith does all."—Just as he said this, he heard them forcing the supposed demoniack into the room, and summoning up all his courage and effrontery, prepared to exorcise her according to a ritual of his own invention: the terror, that in spite of all his efforts to conceal it, glared in his eyes assisting his imposition, and passing upon all present for the emanation of enthusiastick rapture.

"All description falls short of such a scene. The astonished patient was obliged to undergo the whole ceremony, without being permitted to ask the meaning of it, every time she attempted to speak, her voice being drowned by a general exclamation of affright and solemn adjuration to silence, which her amazement made her the more easily comply with.

"As she sat therefore in silent wonder, without any appearance of distraction, during the last act of the farce, the * *Juggler*, as soon as it was finished, addressing himself to her mother, "I told you, madam, (said

* See PICART's *ceremonies and religious customs*. Vol. III. p. 94, &c. —

with an air of triumph) that my *method* was infallible: it was partly invented by that sage and pious prince James I. to whom the policy of Satan's kingdom was as well known as that of his own; the rest is an addition of mine, in which the success testifies that my spirit was not denied divine assistance; scepticks and infidels may scoff and doubt; but to pious faith is given demonstration."—

Then turning to his patient, "And you, my daughter, should repent of all your evil ways, and turn your heart to righteousness, lest the evil one should not only come again and take possession of his former habitation, but also bring others more wicked than himself with him; so that your last estate would be worse than the first. Open your heart therefore to the entrance of faith, and obey the *call* of grace."

This edifying address had an effect very contrary to what was intended. The authoritative air with which he delivered it, and the insinuations of some secret guilt in his exhortation to repentance, provoked her spirit, naturally high, to such a degree, that her anger getting the better of her astonishment, "I desire to know, sir," said she with a look of indignation and contempt) by what right you presume to speak to me in this insolent manner? Overpowered by violence, and out of respect to a person whom I am sorry to see join in such an unnatural combination, I have submitted to listen to the incomprehensible nonsense, by which the sacred name of the Deity has been profaned in the ridiculous farce, which you have just been acting: but I am not under the same obligations to bear with you."

"The resentment that flashed from her eyes, when she began to speak, had raised the apprehensions of the company, that she had not been sufficiently exorcised, which were too strongly confirmed by what she said: respect, however, if not perhaps fear, prevented their interrupting her, till a tame jack-daw that had got up to the top of the house, happening to chatter as he fell down the chimney, just as she said these last words, they all thought the *Juggler's* prophetick fears fulfilled; and that a legion of devils was coming to take possession of her, and falling upon their knees at the same instant,

the

the *Juggler* began to run his lore over again in the most violent agitation ; his superstitious imagination taking the general alarm, while the rest hung down their heads, nor dared to raise their eyes for fear of seeing some horrible sight."

CHAP. IX.

The history of Cælia and Strephon concluded. The Juggler juggled ; and the mystery cleared up at last. Habit too powerful for conviction. The advantage of making the first story good.

" **T**HIS doubled her distress, and almost communicated the infection to her. The terror glaring in all their ghastly looks convinced her that there was something in their conduct more than she could comprehend, and that they did not act thus merely to insult and ridicule her as she had imagined. Unable therefore to resist her impatience to be informed in the meaning of it, she stepped up to her noble lover, for no one dared to hold her any longer, and addressing him with an earnestness that shewed the anxiety and astonishment of her soul, and added not a little to the affright of his, " To you, my lord, (said she) I apply for relief from an amazement and perplexity which torture me almost to madness. What means the violence which has been offered to me ? What means this incomprehensible behaviour of all present ? You have given me reason to imagine I held some place in your esteem ; by that I adjure you not to let me burst with ignorance."

" Though his lordship's fright was little inferior to that of the oldest woman present, and scarce left him power to comply with her request, there was something so affecting in this application, that he could not resist it. " Madam, (said he, looking earnestly at her as he arose from his knees) I hardly know how to obey your commands, for fear of giving you offence."

" Fear not, my lord, (answered she impatiently) I ask for information, and desire to be told the truth."

" Then,

"Then, madam, I am sorry to tell you that you were seized in the garden on an opinion of your being at that instant under the power of witchcraft, if not actually possessed by some evil spirit; and to deliver you from so dreadful a situation, was and is the motive of that behaviour at which you seem to be so much surprized."

"Bewitched! Possessed! Patience. Kind heaven, grant me patience! What can have given occasion to an opinion so basely infamous and absurd?"

"Before he had time to reply, the unlucky jackdaw hopped from the chimney, and, without giving him any warning, perched upon the juggler's head, who happened to kneel very near with his back toward it, and at the same instant repeating the tremendous chatter, caught him by the nose, which was thrown up in his usual attitude, as he muttered over his incoherent ejaculations.

"Such an attack was too dreadful to be borne. The affrighted wretch threw himself forward on the ground, and in the guilty terrors of imagination, thinking all the devils of hell had laid hold on him to revenge the insolence of his pretending to an authority over them, roared out with all his might. "O spare me! Spare your poor servant, and I will never give you the least disturbance more! Never presume to offend you by mimicking a power which I too well know I am not possessed of! Do what you please with all the world beside, but spare your faithful indefatigable slave! Spare me at least for this time, and take me wholly when I die."

"His lordship, who by his having risen to answer the adjuration of his mistress, had an opportunity of seeing the cause of the poor *Juggler's* fright, the ridiculousness of which opened his eyes to the absurdity of the whole scene, burst out into an immoderate fit of laughter, in which she joined him with all her power.

"As soon as he was able to speak, "Never fear, doctor, (said he) I'll insure you for this time; your master has given you the reprieve you desire, and left this honest jack-daw to witness the bargain."

"It is impossible to express the effect which this speech had upon all present. They instantly raised their heads,

heads, and turning their eyes to the prostrate Juggler, saw the jack-daw busied in tearing his wig, which had unluckily tangled about his claws.

"This sight instantly put an end to all their fears; they raised a peal of laughter that shook the room, which sufficiently informed the unfortunate juggler of his disgrace, who, rising from the ground in the utmost confusion, slunk away without daring to shew his face, especially as he had made such a fatal discovery of his ignorance and impostures, as it was impossible for his most inventive assurance and hypocrisy to extenuate.

"But the company was too intent upon other matters to take any farther notice of him. As soon as the tumult of their mirth, in which all strove to hide the remembrance of their past folly by their present loudness, had subsided, they made all possible apologies to the lady for their behaviour, and expressed the highest abashment at their own weakness, in giving credit to such a ridiculous story, at the same time fixing their eyes upon his lordship as the author of it.

"This threw him into a very disagreeable situation. He saw that it was necessary for him to exculpate himself; but how to begin, or in what manner to do it, he was utterly at a loss.

"The lady and he stood looking at each other thus for some time, till at length her impatience made her break silence. "I hope, my lord, (said she) that you are satisfied with the success of your exorcism; and now that I am restored to myself, should be glad to know your lordship's reason for entertaining an opinion not only so injurious to me, but also so ridiculous in itself."

"Madam, (answered he, in the highest confusion) to see the absurdity of the scene in the strongest light; and should be sincerely glad that the removal of one difficulty convinced me, that the opinion which gave rise to it was as ill grounded as, I am sensible, the consequences of that opinion have been ridiculous."

"For heaven's sake, what can that difficulty be, my lord? Speak! Speak without reserve! That delicacy which at other times is necessary, is improper in such cases as this, and must give place to plainness and sincerity."

"I mean, madam, those mysterious conversations which you hold in the shady walk, *you best know by what means*, with an absent person."

"Means, my lord! — *By what means!* — I don't understand you." —

"Such conversations, madam, can be held only by the assistance of evil spirits, or under the illusion of fascination: this is what I mean, madam! And I wish I was not obliged to add, that your manner of acting, at the same time, was so extravagant, that nothing but being under some such unhappy influence can account for

"It is not easy to conceive the confusion with which these words struck her. In the flightiness of a warm imagination, she had considered this method of holding an aerial conversation, not only as innocent and safe from reprehension, but also as something of a refined and elevated nature, never suspecting its being subject to so ridiculous a construction, nor indeed giving herself time to reflect, that she must be certainly taken notice of one way or other; and some such wrong construction put upon it, as it was impossible that reason ever could suggest the most distant conjecture of the right.

But her eyes were now opened, and she saw her folly in its most mortifying consequences. At first she was undetermined how to act, whether to attempt passing it off as no more than a meer whim of her own, without any meaning or design, or candidly to confess the whole; for she saw the indispensable necessity she was under to give some account or other of it.

The difficulty was distressing; the latter must betray mystery, which, as too sublime for common minds to comprehend, would only expose her to farther ridicule; the former she thought would shew a levity and dishonesty which must bring her understanding in question.

This reflection determined her. When once a woman entertains an opinion of her own understanding, there is nothing which she will not sacrifice to preserve it. "I find myself reduced, my lord, (said she, after some time) to the disagreeable necessity of disclosing what I have hitherto had rather conceal. The conversations which I have

have given occasion to all this folly and disturbance, and so much out of the common way, that, to set them in proper light, it will be necessary to trace them to their original."

"She then, in a few words, ingenuously told the whole, in the manner I have related; and, to confirm the truth of her account, produced several of her *friend's* letters making appointments for, and fixing the subjects of their imaginary conversations.

"His lordship, who, from the circumstances he knew, though for obvious reasons he had thought proper to conceal his knowledge of them, was convinced that she had told the truth, asked her pardon in the politest manner for the part he had unwittingly acted in the affair, and was so charmed with her ingenuity, and the delicacy and sublimity of her sentiments, that he left her ten times more in love than ever.

"But when he came in a cooler moment to reflect on the character of her *friend*, and the unhappy consequences of utter loss of reason, which such a flight of imagination might too probably end in, even though his other apprehensions could be removed, prudence prevailed upon him to put a violence upon his inclinations, and break off, while it was yet in his power, a dangerous a connection.

"As to the lady, her mind was so much taken with her darling folly, that instead of being cured by all this vexation and disgrace, she immediately gave her *friend* an account of the whole, and appointed a *meeting* that very evening in her closet, to enjoy a little together at so whimsical an affair.

"From that time she has dreamed away her life in the manner you saw, an absolute blank in the creation, useless to herself and all the world; so unaccountable a story raising such a prejudice against her, that no man ever sought an alliance with her after.

"Nor were the consequences of it much less agreeable to her *friend*. The *Juggler*, who was sensible that he had totally forfeited his influence in the family by the unfortunate adventure of the jack-pot, was resolved to obviate the effect of their telling

and be revenged for the mirth they had indulged in his expence by making such a representation of the whole as should throw the burden entirely upon them.

Accordingly, the very next morning, he entertained his flock with a most melancholy tale of a lady of distinction's being bewitched by a certain gentleman, who holding frequent conversations with him, in his absence, by the assistance of an evil spirit, under whose dominion he had put her; and how he himself had offered to deliver her by the power of his prayers; but that her friends, out of a perverse pride, had refused his assistance, and affected to make a jest of the affair; and she, with the highest appearance of piety and compassion for so deplorable a case, offered up a long and fervent prayer for her deliverance.

This representation he knew would prepossess his hearers in his favour, and prevent their giving credit to any thing that might be said to his disadvantage, however notorious and true: and though he did not directly mention the persons names, he, as if without design, gave a description of them, that no one could be at a loss to know whom he meant.

This story, as he intended, was industriously propagated, with the advantage of such circumstances as every relater thought proper to add; in consequence of which not only the lady was ashamed to shew her face, but there was also such a prejudice raised against her husband, that for a long time he was insulted and reviled by the mob in the most opprobrious manner whenever he stirred out, and more than once was in danger of having his innocence put to the test of a *dipping*; the intimacy of his person unhappily agreeing with the opinion which the vulgar entertained of witches, and confirming their prejudice against him; while by this address of making good the first story, the secret by which he had so long supported himself against the force of numberless detections of the blackest nature, the *Juggler* had the satisfaction to see his enemies overwhelmed by a stroke which he had so dextrously shifted from his own head."

CHAP. X.

Different appearances of the same object seen in different lights. A whimsical representation of the last efforts of gallantry, with other no less curious matters.

“**Y**OU may perhaps have a curiosity (continued the spirit) to see one who has acted a part in every respect so extraordinary as this gentleman. He holds him yonder; and acknowledge the power of a wand able to conquer the antipathies of nature, and make for a person the object of a tender passion.”

The astonishment with which the sight of him struck me is not to be conceived. Though I was prepared to expect an appearance remarkably disagreeable, my imagination had never framed an idea of such absolute deformity as now met my eyes. The description would be too disgusting. Turning from him hastily, “Impossible, O my guide, (said I) that this can have been the object for whom that beauteous creature sacrificed her happiness? I have seen too many instances of the firmness and capriciousness of the female heart; but never did I think they could rise so high as this before.”

“View him again, (said he, touching my eyes with his wand) and then let me hear your sentiments.”

“O gracious spirit! (exclaimed I, in a transport) how lovely a creature can this be? Such beauty never did my eyes behold before this moment. What grace! What elegance! — And then the unbounded generous benevolence! — That spirited sensibility and fire! — He must be the master-piece of nature! Some favored work of heaven, to shew mankind an instance of perfection.”

“Such is the light! (answered he with a smile, and touched my eyes again with the wand, and restored the gentleman to his former appearance) such is the light which his writings represent him; and so does the brilliancy of his wit dazzle the delighted imagination, and make his very defects appear perfections. I have brought you this view of him, to convince you of the error

ing too hastily from the first appearance. Not that we are to give too implicit credit to this either. To form a proper judgment of a man, his actions must be considered; and though the motive may in reality often be the intrinsic merit even of these, the error will be pardonable. Observe his present employment, and it will give you a just idea of his character. Such parts of his past life as may illustrate this, and afford instructive entertainment, I will afterwards draw a short sketch

On turning my eyes then to the gentleman, I saw him in the most whimsical situation possible to be conceived. He was sitting up in his bed, wrapped in flannels, and supported by bolsters, with a writing-table before him, and upon a frame that stood across the bed, to prevent bearing on his feeble knees.

On this lay an heap of love-letters, odes, and sonnets, subjects of which were so ill suited to his condition, that they almost seemed to be a satire on it, at the same time that he perused them with an appearance of pleasure, which made his very infirmities ridiculous, every attempt at laughter being echoed by a groan, every smile followed by a frown of agony.

As soon as he had read them through with attention, he reclined his head upon his shoulder, and, shutting his eyes, fell into a meditation on the manner in which he should answer them.

When he had mused for some moments in this posture, *Sylvia!* — (said he, thinking aloud) *Sylvia!* — Aye, begins. — Raptures and fire for her! — *Damon* must kiss her home. Youth and luxuriant health require a bold address. The thought will warm, elevate my fancy! — O my shoulder! — My back too!" Then calling a servant, "Fetch me another blanket. The cold cuts through me. There! That will do! — So much for *Sylvia!* (continuing his former soliloquy) Who comes next? — *Corinna* — Wanton baggage! — *Anioret* must woo in double entendre! Lewdness scarce wrapt in gauze must be his cue. — This cholic — Oh! — Some cordial! Fill the glass. O my bowels! — So. Now a better. — Then for *Pamela*. I'm tired of *Musidorus*, must drop her. That unimpassioned sentimental strain

strain gives me the hip. I'd sooner write a sermon. — *Chloe!* — *Lucinda!* — *Phyllis!* — Aye. They'll come of course! I need not study much for them."

Having run over the list of his correspondents in this manner, he directly began to answer them, as fast as the frequent interruptions of his various pains and aches would permit.

It is inconceivable with what address and spirit he assumed all these different characters, in spite of the repugnancy of nature, in his enfeebled tortured state to every sensation of pleasure. Gay, grave, or loose, light, cold, amorous, pious, or profane, he was every thing to every one, according to the part he undertook.

The fatigue of such a task was too great. As soon as it was finished, his spirits failed him, and he sunk back upon the bed, where he lay in more than infantine imbecility, while his servant removed the writing-table and locked up his works.

"What think you now (said my guide) of the volatility of human genius? — Of the power of imagination to create its own happiness?"

"It is impossible (answered I) not to admire such abilities, though the use they are put to almost takes off their merit: For what can be conceived more ridiculous and disgusting than to see old age mimicking the levities of youth, and pretending passions which it can no longer feel; passions too powerful of themselves without such irritation, and to which nature, that makes their impulse irresistible, prescribes mysterious privacy and restraint."

"Yet such (replied the spirit) has been the constant business of his life; and to this foolish vicious vanity have abilities been prostituted, which proper application would have made an honour to himself, and an advantage to his country. Sometimes, it is true, he has broke the chains of this insatiation, and given instances of the most exalted powers and virtues of the human mind; but the force of habit soon sunk him down again to his former folly, and the glory of these short emergencies, like lightening flashing through the darkness of the night, seemed only to shew his indolence in a more striking light.

"You

You have seen the number of sonnets and epistles he has now wrote in varied characters, and to various persons, and justly reprehended the folly of an amusement so inconsistent with his present state, so much beneath his better reason.

But how much higher still will your indignation be when you know that of all those in writing to whom he thus consumes the few remaining moments of his life, he only have any existence out of his own imagination; *Elia*, whom you have just now seen, and one more, whose vices have been a disgrace to her sex, though, to indulge his absurd vanity, he shews these labours of folly as the genuine produce of a real correspondence.

The history of the former you already know; that of the other, though not so much out of common life, filled with incidents which would afford abundant matter of entertainment, were they not foreign to our present purpose. One only in which this gentleman was concerned I will relate, as it illustrates his character in the strongest light."

CHAP. XI.

Anecdotes of a celebrated female. A fencer foiled at his own weapons. Secret of a correspondence not so uncommon as unaccountable; with a striking instance of vicious vanity. A new scene.

THIS celebrated female was one whom her vices of every kind had reduced to the necessity of striving to subsist by stratagem, when debauchery anticipated old age, and worn off the bloom of those beauties which had been the first cause of her fall, the price of whose prostitution had since afforded her a wretched support.

In the promiscuous acquaintance of such a life, she happened to fall into the company of this gentleman, readily forming an idea of his character, judged he was a proper subject for her to try her talents on.

"Accordingly

"You

“ Accordingly she wrote him a letter, professing passion, the extraordinariness of which for such an object she palliated by praising the charms of his mind, and turning the imaginary advantages of external beauty into the most delicate and poignant ridicule; and proposing a correspondence, on condition of his giving her an inviolable assurance, that he never would take any methods to find her out, as it was absolutely impossible for them to have any personal intercourse whatsoever. She gave him an address, by which she took care it should not be in his power to trace her.

“ This was attacking him at his own weapons. The vivacity and wit displayed in her letter, (for nature had been as liberal to her in the endowments of mind as the beauties of form, and her way of life, which had worn out the latter, served only to polish and give keenness to the former,) surprised and charmed him beyond expression. Beside, mystery doubles the pleasure of intrigue, by giving scope to the imagination incessantly to frame new schemes of delight, and keeping the attention always fixed. He therefore readily accepted her offer, and began a correspondence, in the course of which she raised his desires so high, (for he was not then quite sunk into his present state of decrepitude,) and played with them so artfully, sometimes seeming to discover an inclination, and then starting difficulties as from virtue, and giving equivocal hints of dependence in her circumstances, that she led him insensibly to make her most liberal offers, if she would only indulge him with an interview, on terms of the strictest honour; and, to remove every doubt of the sincerity of his intentions, signed his proposal regularly with his own name, the correspondence between them having been till then carried on under the fictitious ones of *Corydon* and *Phillis*.

“ Though this was directly what she aimed at, she still affected difficulties, and expressed doubts, to preserve appearances, and draw him to explain and confirm his proposals beyond a possibility of retraction or evasion; and then at length complied with his desire of an interview, with all the diffidence of virgin modesty, the coy, reluctant, amorous delay of unexperienced youth desire.

“ Raised

"Raised to the highest pinnacle of expectation by this management, his astonishment may be easily conceived, when he met an old acquaintance at the place of assignment. His disappointment was so great, that he stared at her for some moments before he could believe his senses.

"But she soon convinced him that he was no longer under a mistake. Throwing herself at his feet, she implored him to pardon a deception which necessity and hopeless love equally suggested; and, wretched as he must know her circumstances to be, offered to return him all his letters, and depend entirely on his generosity, if he would only allow her to enjoy personally that place in his esteem which he had honoured her correspondence with; and appealed to all her letters, if she had been guilty of any other deceit than that tacit one of not revealing herself directly; or had given him just reason to form any particular expectation from this meeting, in which he could say he was disappointed.

"She was sufficiently acquainted with him to be convinced of her safety, in making this offer. His ample fortune raised him above regard to money; and no human heart ever glowed with a more benevolent readiness to dispense it to the relief of the distressed. Beside, could he shew any design to take an ungenerous advantage of this confidence, there was a material difference between actually giving up his letters, and making such an offer, which she could easily retract.

"It was some time before he recovered himself sufficiently to give her an answer. At length, having weighed every circumstance dispassionately, he raised her from the ground, and smiling, with a beneficence that dissipated all her doubts, "Make no apology, madam, (said he) for a device that has afforded me the highest pleasure I have ever enjoyed. All mankind wears a mask; and happy are they to whom the pulling it off proves no greater disadvantage. If I have shewn any surprise at meeting you, it was only at my own inattention, that had I before discovered the beauties of your mind in so much conversation as we have had together."

"He then assured her of his friendship, and in return for the generous offer she had made him of restoring his letters, gave her a considerable sum of money, to settle her

her affairs; which she preferred to an annuity, that might prove precarious.

“ Since that time she has been, though privately, his principal correspondent in different characters, which she assumes with as much ease as himself, to give variety and afford matter for agreeable surprize, the pleasure of which he never fails to reward liberally on the discovery: thus she is the *Cynthia*, *Chloe*, *Constantia*, *Phryne*, *Phyllis*, &c. of his muse; and indeed sends him all the letters he shews with such ostentation as from different persons, except those he often does himself the honour of writing to himself, *Cælia*’s being in general too particular for public inspection.

“ In one instance only has their correspondence been made public, which was by her addressing to him a specious apology for the particular vice of her profession, in which she lessens the merit, if not denies the necessity, of the opposite virtue that has ever been esteemed the indispensable test of female honour. His accepting such an address at a time of life when the subject of it was meer matter of speculation to him, is a strong though not uncommon instance of the force of vicious habit, which can thus influence old age to a ridiculous vanity of insinuating a taste for the most reprehensible pleasures of youth, by countenancing them in theory, after the practice is become impossible.

“ But the greatest danger of this infatuation is, when it fixes upon a particular object. Its force, which before was weakened by dispersion, is then collected into one point, and the extravagance of its effects encreases in proportion as the abilities for its gratification fail.

“ Observe that person walking in deep meditation, by the side of yonder stream. The situation he is in at this very moment is one of the most striking instances nature has ever shewn, of the difficulty of shaking off the ascendancy which loose, lascivious blandishments and female artifice will insensibly gain over the heart, in spite of the strongest admonitions of reason and virtue.

“ While he is forming a resolution, on his steadiness, on which depends the crisis of his fate, I’ll give you a few general sketches of his past life, as far as is necessary to explain his present perplexity.”

C H A P.

CHAP. XII.

account of a remarkable person. Common consequences of a common connection. The scene changed. A good partner often helps out a bad game.

HIS youth opened with every prospect of happiness and glory, which an exalted rank and the most promising abilities of mind could present; nor did rising years disappoint the most sanguine hopes formed of him, 'till an unlawful passion, after his shadow had begun to lengthen in the vale of life, poisoned his domestic peace, and gave his mind a looser turn.

Happening to go to one of the scenes of public entertainment with which this place abounds, he was struck with something in the appearance of one of the female performers. Curiosity to know whether her conversation was equally agreeable with her looks prompted him to intimate a desire of sitting half an hour in her company, after her performance was ended. His rank raised above refusal; she received his invitation as an honour, and exerted her powers of pleasing to such advantage, that, though he had not the least intention of entering into any particular connection with her when he terminated this interview, before they parted he proposed to quit her present precarious occupation, and live with her.

The beauties of such persons, as well as their talents, are too often venal. She complied with joy; and, if not absolutely justifying such indulgencies, at least making them pass uncensured, he not only received her publicly in the character of his mistress, but also, to remove every obstacle to his pleasure, procured her to quit her husband an employment in one of the distant colonies; who readily made the infamous though advantageous exchange of an abandoned wife, for an independent subsistence.

When a woman of this cast once gets admission into a man's heart, she leaves no artifice untried to gain the absolute dominion of it. Hers were too successful. Her insinuating address she soon improved the influence

ence of her charms to such a degree, as to be an overmatch for reason in all his resolves, and in some measure to become the sovereign arbitress of his fate.

“Virtue makes many struggles before it will entirely give up an heart of which it once has had possession; and this the perplexity in which you behold him at present is a signal proof. Surfeited with the tumultuous gratification of loose desire, he languishes for the pure tranquillity of happiness of connubial love. On this important occasion prudence and inclination have gone hand in hand in directing his choice, of the success of which reason sees no room to doubt. The only difficulty is, to break the chains of his present unhappy connection, as the generous delicacy of his heart will not permit him to put on an appearance of dislike, or exert an authority over one absolutely in his power, and who has always been subservient to his pleasure; and she is too firmly attached to her own interest to understand the milder hints of rejection which he has of late given her. The throws of such a heart in this trying conflict may be worthy of attention.

Just as the spirit said this, the person of whom he spoke stopped short, and knitting his brow, as if in the act of forming some important resolution, “It shall be so! (said he, with vehemence, and slapping his right hand upon his heart) It shall be so; I’ll shake off this disgraceful insatiation, and return once more to the deserted paths of virtue and of glory.”—At these words a blush of conscious indignation overspread his face; and his eyes sparkled with the ardour of a resolution which instantly enlivened all his frame.

He was prevented from pursuing his meditations any farther by the approach of a person, the sight of whom seemed to double his emotion. This was he to whom the education of his youth had been most worthily entrusted, and who had for some time felt the most poignant grief, at seeing the fruits of all his anxious care blasted by the baleful influence of this passion, though respect for his superior station had hitherto kept him silent on so delicate a subject.

But he was no longer able to contain himself. A sense of duty over-balanced all regard to forms, and he resolved to acquit himself of the sacred office of a friend.

showing so destructive an error in its proper light, be the consequence never so disagreeable to him. With this resolution he had followed him hither, when the gentleman advancing to meet him, anticipated the painful attempt. "My friend (said he, embracing him with ardour,) my friend is come in an happy moment to confirm the resolution of my soul: I see at length the fatal error into which I have unwarily fallen, and am determined to avoid its snares for the future. That wretched woman shall no longer lead my heart astray."—

"Hear, gracious heaven! (said the good old man, dropping upon his knees and raising his hands and eyes in ecstasy), and ratify that resolution."—Then catching his hand, and pressing it eagerly to his lips, "O my friend!—my son!"—sobbed he, while the big tears rolled down his reverend cheeks, and choked his utterance.

Such eloquence was not to be resisted. "My friend!—my father!" answered the gentleman, falling insensibly on the good man's neck, and mingling tears of piety and joy in the honest over-flowings of his heart.

After some moments spent in this silent rapture, "Intimated wretch that I was (said the gentleman, raising the other tenderly in his arms) to slight the friendly admonitions which my conscious soul read in thy troubled looks: how could I give that worthy heart such pain?"

"Name it not, my son (answered he, in a voice of ecstasy) think not of any thing that I have suffered. This blessed account of thy return to virtue has amply over-aid it all. May heaven enable you to keep this sacred resolution so worthy of your truly-noble heart; and I have nothing more to wish for in this life."

"Fear not! (replied the gentleman) your friend shall never act unworthy of himself again! shall never more disgrace your virtuous care. This is not a sudden gust of passion. Reason and virtue, which have inspired the thought, will bear me through the execution. Never will I enter yonder monument of my folly, (pointing to a sumptuous house which he had built for his mistress) till the forcerefs is removed. The enchantment under which I held me is at last dissolved, and I am my own master again: nor is this all; I will go this minute

and offer my heart and hand to one who will do honour to my choice: you shall accompany me, plead for your friend, and be surety for the immoveable firmness of my resolution, my truth, and honour. A servant can deliver a mandate of my dismissal to that unhappy creature.

"Saying this, he stepped into his chariot, which he had ordered to attend him there; and taking the venerable old man with him, drove to the lady's house, whom he had in secret fixed to be the partner of his life, where he urged his suit so powerfully, and was so well assisted by his advocate, that as reason could suggest no objection to the fair one, and her heart really felt none from inclination; she shewed her assent to his proposals as far as was consistent with the forms observed on such delicate occasions.

"Flushed with this success, as soon as ever he went to his own house, he sent a peremptory message to his mistress, to quit her present habitation directly, and retire to some other better suited to her condition, promising to make such a provision for her future support as should place her above the temptations of necessity, in which he found her, if her ready obedience to this order and regular conduct for the remainder of her life should merit such a favour. In a cooler moment, he would have found it difficult to send so harsh a message; but his spirits were now up, and he could think of nothing but the happiness he had in view in his intended marriage.

"This was a stroke for which his mistress was quite unprepared. Her astonishment, therefore, at receiving such an order may be easily conceived. At first she doubted the authenticity of it, and threatened the servant with his master's severest wrath for such an insolent abuse of his name: but when his persisting in it convinced her of the fallacy of such an hope, she resolved to try all possible means to avert the misfortune; and as she was free from every attachment of personal regard that might have made grief disturb her mind, her ready genius soon suggested the most effectual one to her.

"Accordingly the first thing she did was to gain the servant to her interest by a considerable bribe, and promises of farther favour, when this storm should blow over; the sudden and groundless violence of which, shew-

ed, she said, that it could not last ; and then giving him instructions what to say to his master, prepared to act her own part in this important scene, according to the success he met with.

“ The gentleman, as soon as the servant returned, naturally enquired how she had received his message ?

“ Sir, (said the fellow, who had put on a melancholy look, and now sighed as if from the bottom of his heart) she at first could scarce believe what I said ; but when I had removed her doubt, she lifted up her eyes for some moments without speaking a word, and then fell into a fit, from which I thought she never would recover : however, she came to herself at last ; and when a shower of tears had given her heart some ease, and she was able to speak, “ Tell your master, said the dear lady, as she sat upon the floor, that it is my duty to obey his orders, be they what they will ; though I little thought ever to have received such as these, and in so scornful and cruel a manner. Sure he might have spoke to me himself, without exposing me to servants ! But I have no right to complain : God bless him, and prosper him in all his ways ; ” — and then she wept again, and wrung her hands in such agony it would have melted an heart of stone — saying this, the fellow wiped his eyes which had been well onioned for the purpose, and hung down his head, as if he was overcome with grief.

“ It is impossible to describe the gentleman’s situation when he received this account. He was affected by her distress in the severest manner. The generous humanity of his heart would have shared in the sufferings of his greatest enemy ; what then must he have felt at those of one whom he had so lately been accustomed to think of with the tenderest regard ! His delicacy also was hurtled at having sent such a message in such a manner, and he disdained the thought of exerting authority with rigour, where resistance was impossible. In a word, though his resolution was not absolutely overturned, he secretly began to wish, that he had not been so precipitate in putting it in execution.

“ The servant saw the conflict in his heart ; and, faithful to the trust he had basely undertaken, as soon as he was dismissed from his presence, flew to acquaint her with it.”

CHAP. XIII.

Looking back often dangerous, Female artifice triumphant over reason and virtue. The natural consequences of this. A remarkable instance of the effect of complying with the fashion.

“THIS account confirmed her wavering hopes; she resolved not to lose a moment, but strive to improve the impression which her associate had thus fortunately made in her favour, before the unknown motive of her disgrace should have time to counteract it. Accordingly she went directly to his house, and as he had not taken the precaution to forbid her admission, rushed into the room where he was, in a well-imitated phrenzy, threw herself at his feet, and embraced his knees, in all the apparent agony of heart which the fondest despair could dictate, before he could possibly prevent her.

“There is nothing more dangerous than looking back to former scenes of pleasure; it softens the mind, and makes it long for a repetition of them. The account of her distress had awakened his compassion, and he was undesignedly running over all the engaging qualities and soft endearments which had given him such delight the very moment she entered the room.

“If the description could affect him so strongly, what then must he not feel from the sight? He was not proof to such an attack. All his resolution vanished in an instant; he raised her from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, restored her to the empire of his heart with tenfold the authority she had possessed before.

“The only difficulty that remained was how to break off his engagements with the lady, whom he had just paid his addresses to in so serious and public a manner: as for his friend, he concluded rightly, that after this relapse he should never see him more.

“He was not long at a loss. Even in so delicately distressing an affair as this, his soul detested dissimulation, and he resolved to make her admire his candour at least, though she might blame his fickleness. Accordingly he

wrote

wrote her a letter next morning, to tell her, that upon examining his heart more nearly, he found another had taken such strong possession of it, that it was not in his power to give it with his hand; wherefore he thought the latter alone unworthy of her acceptance, nor should presume to press the offer of it any farther.

"The lady's indignation was equal to her surprize, so despicable an instance of levity: she thought it beneath her to return an answer to such a letter, or take any notice of the writer; to shew her perfect indifference and contempt for whom she soon after listened to the addresses of another.

"As for him, his condition became worse than ever. According to the common though mistaken notion of over-bearing contempt, he gloried in his disgraceful follies which he carried to ten times more extravagant excesses than before; while she, convinced that he had fastened his chains too strongly ever to be shaken, returned his fondness with indifference, and at the very same time that she was making him the dupe of her mercenary designs, took every occasion of treating him with insolence and tyranny.

"The consequence of this was natural. Destitute of domestic peace, robbed of the approbation of his own mind, and conscious of the contempt of every man of sense and virtue, he grew careless of himself, his affairs ran to confusion and ruin, and his name became a by-word among all his acquaintances." —

"O my guide (said I, shocked at so deplorable a fall) how powerful are the wiles of woman! How dangerous it for man to let her get an ascendancy over him! Once he resigns the reins which nature wisely put into her hands, I see that it is impossible for him ever to retrieve them again, and assert the just prerogatives of his superior station!

"It may perhaps be too much to say that it is absolutely impossible; (answered he) though many circumstances concur to make the attempt most difficult. Pre-eminence on his greater strength, man thinks it beneath him to be upon his guard against her, till she has taken such firm possession of her authority, that it appears less painful to suffer, than struggle to shake off a tyranny

whose chains are rivetted so fast. Or, should he venture on the attempt, she makes her very weakness a defence and expects to be let conquer, because she is unable to resist, throwing herself upon a generosity to which her own heart is a stranger. The event is generally more favourable than she deserves; and a false tenderness permits her to retain a power which false security first gave her an opportunity to usurp.

“ But the severest case is to be governed by a woman who is herself a slave to any particular vice or folly. To break the double chain is a difficulty few have resolution to attempt; and fewer have attempted with success.

“ Of this you may behold a striking instance in your der house, which presents you with a scene of such confusion. That gentleman, whom you see in all the apparent agitation of the most determined wrath, gave his heart and hand together to the lovely woman who sat beside him melted into tears. The advantage of the match, according to the mercenary maxim which prevails at present, was on her side; but love overlooked such mean considerations, and he thought his elevated rank received honour from her participation.

“ Her heart felt all the ardour of so generous a passion; she devoted herself entirely to his happiness, and by her obsequious attention to every motion of his will gained such an influence over him, that he soon forgot he had any will of his own, and resigned himself absolutely and solely to her direction, pleased with a yoke which fondness would not let him feel the weight of.

“ From the first dawn of reason in her mind, she had ever expressed the strongest dislike to the idle drudgery of play; but now the tyranny of fashion obliged her to give into a practice which was become the cement of society, the general business of genteel life. Example can soften prejudice, and habit even reconcile antipathies. The reluctance with which she complied with this custom soon wore off, and she entered into the very spirit of gaming with an avidity that exceeded her former aversion.

“ Her husband, whose heart happily was untainted with this fatal vice, was alarmed at a madness which he saw in all its dreadful consequences. He knew the risk

must always lose; the numbers who are destitute of any other means of subsistence, beside their expertness in the mysteries of play, making a property of their folly; and experience had shewn him to what black expedients women will have recourse to repair their losses; how debts of honour are too often paid with honour itself. He resolved, therefore, to take the first opportunity to warn her against indulging a passion, the apprehension of whose consequences gave him so much pain; judging that his advice would have more weight when it should seem to arise from some immediate cause, than if obtruded abruptly, or offered only in cool speculation.

"Nor did he long wait for the occasion he desired. Observing an uncommon uneasiness in his wife's looks the morning as they sat alone at breakfast, he enquired what was the cause of it with all the tender anxiety of love. A guilty blush overspread her face; she hung down her head in the utmost confusion, and could scarce find spirit to say, on the most earnest entreaty, that she had lost a sum of money at play the night before, which she could not pay without his assistance, her private stipend; ample as his love had made it, having all sunk to the same gulph before.

"The pain she evidently felt at making this discovery, flattered him with an hope that she would for ever after avoid the occasion of it. He therefore would not aggravate her concern, by saying any thing just then; but giving her the money she had lost, and an additional supply for her own necessary occasions, told her, with a look of inexpressible tenderness, that she should never feel any uneasiness in his power to remove.

"However, not entirely to miss so favourable an opportunity, he took occasion next morning, from some late occurrences of a similar kind among his own acquaintances, to express his disapprobation of that pernicious practice in the strongest terms; and drew the consequences of it in so black a light, that, unable to bear the reproaches of her own conscience, she burst into tears, and, falling on her knees, implored his pardon in the most affecting manner.

"Rejoiced at this behaviour, which he thought a proof of her concern for what she had informed him of the

the day before, and an happy assurance of her never falling into the same error any more, he raised her from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, told her he had not spoken in allusion to any thing past, which he had thought no more of since, and hoped that no future instances of the kind should ever recal it to his remembrance.

“ This was more than she was able to bear. She sunk down upon her knees again, and, as soon as a flood of tears had given her utterance, owned, in terms of the warmest contrition, that, tempted by an hope of recovering her former loss, she had ventured to play again the night before, but with the same success, having not only lost all the money he had given her, but added considerably to her debt also.

C H A P. XIV.

Worse luck, and more of it. A new method for breaking a bad habit. Travellers often return without their errand.

“ **T**HE husband’s astonishment and distress at this unexpected news may be easily conceived. He stood some moments before he had power to speak. At length, raising her from the ground, though not with the same emotions as before, “ I had flattered myself, my dear, (said he with a serious look, and accent of reproach) that the concern you shewed yesterday secured me from any more follies of this kind ; but I see I was mistaken. However, I will pay your debts once more ; but remember, I tell you, this is the last time I shall do so. My fortune, though sufficient with prudence and economy to support the dignity of my rank, is not equal to such boundless dissipation, by which I may be ruined before I am aware. Nor is this all ; other consequences too often follow this passion, the remotest apprehensions of which I cannot bear.

“ Distant as this insinuation was, it struck her to the soul. Though she was confident of her own virtue, too many melancholy instances shewed that in the general

was not unjustly founded. She begged that he would have a more favourable opinion of her, implored again his pardon for what was past, and promised in the strongest terms never to give him the same cause of displeasure more. This was all he desired; he directly gave her the money; and throwing his arms around her neck, sealed her forgiveness with a kiss of rapture.

“ It is a just observation, that vices take the deepest root in weakest minds. This accounts for the common remark, that woman, when once she goes astray, is more profligate and harder to be reclaimed than man. Of all the passions which mark the character of the present age, that which runs into the most extravagant and incorrigible excess, even in the ablest minds, is this of gaming; what havock then must such a tyrant make where it scarce meets any opposition from reason! How difficult must it be to break its chains!

“ She had promised more than she was able to perform. The love of play had taken too fast hold of her heart ever to be entirely expelled, and in a very little time drew her into the same distress again, with this additional aggravation, that she knew not how to apply to her husband for relief, as she had formerly done. But such an affair could not long remain concealed from his knowledge. Her creditor, on two or three breaches of promise, applied to him directly for it by letter. What he felt on receiving such a demand is not to be described. He answered coldly, that he would enquire into the affair; and then went to his wife’s father to ask his advice, how he should wean her from so dangerous an habit, telling him the preceding circumstances without exaggeration or excuse.

“ The father’s wrath arose almost to madness at such an account. He proposed methods which were not only improper, but even impossible to be pursued; and treated her husband’s proposal of removing her from the temptation, as there was no probability of reclaiming her otherwise from the folly, as an instance of unmanly weakness rather than the effect of prudent moderation and tender affection: however, as his passion cooled, he was obliged to yield to the justice of his arguments; and he undertook to enforce her obedience by his authority,

city, should she attempt to oppose her husband, whose love made him diffident of his own resolution in so delicate a struggle.

“ To avoid a contest that must be equally disagreeable to them all, they judged it would be the best way to give her the first intimation of the design, in such a manner as should convince her that it must be in vain for her to oppose it. Accordingly, as her husband and she were sitting at breakfast next morning, when the news-paper was brought in as usual, the first glance she cast on it presented her with an advertisement, (placed in the most conspicuous part of it for that purpose) giving notice of a speedy sale of all her husband's coaches, horses, furniture, &c. who intended to go and reside abroad with his whole family for some years.”

“ Starting in astonishment, “ Good God, my dear, (said she) look here ! what can this mean ? —

“ To pay this demand,” (said he sternly, pulling her creditor's letter out of his pocket, and reaching it to her.)

“ It is impossible to describe her situation at this sight. Conscious guilt deprived her of power to speak or move. She stood petrified with shame and horror.”

“ I am sorry, madam, (continued he) that you have driven me to this extremity ; but I will not sacrifice my fortune, if not perhaps worse, by staying any longer in this place.”

“ O, forgive me ! — Try me ! — Try me but once more ! — I promise.” — She was unable to say any more, a gush of tears choaked her utterance ; which he waited for her to give full vent to, before he would pursue his purpose any farther. In this critical situation you behold him at present, your own observation of their conduct in which will be more satisfactory than any description. Take notice only, that his wrath is worked up to this height by art, and that his resolution is scarcely proof to the sight of her distress ; while, on the other hand, vexation glisens through her tears, and shews that she is less grieved for the cause than alarmed for the consequence of his displeasure, which she is this very moment casting about how to evade.”

When

When my guide had concluded this account, I fixed my attention to the scene which had given occasion to it. The first violence of the lady's grief had begun by this time to subside, which her husband thinking the proper moment to make an impression on her : " Madam, (said he, replying to her last words) my resolution is unalterably fixed ; you know what faith I ought to place in promises."

The reproach implied in these words stung her pride. She had been too long accustomed to receive implicit obedience to every thing she said, to bear such an affrontive insinuation passively, and resolved to shew that she would not give up her authority so easily. Rising therefore in an instant above her suppliant mood, I know too, sir, (said she, with an indignant air) that I am not your slave, nor to be forced to any thing against my will. You may keep your resolution, and go if you please, mine is to stay ; nor shall you find it less unalterable than your own."——

" Madam ! madam ! this false spirit ill becomes you ; nor think it will avail. Your tears were far more powerful ; but all are now in vain ; and I will be obeyed. With these words he left the room, proud of having supported his resolution so manfully, and went to give orders for the immediate execution of his design.

But she was far from thinking of obedience yet. Her heart was so wedded to the pleasures of her present way of life, that she looked on leaving it as the severest punishment. Beside, her pride was piqued by the authority with which he spoke ; and she resolved to suffer the worst effects of his anger, rather than submit to a yoke which she thought she had so effectually shaken off.

When she had formed this resolution, the next difficulty was how to execute it. The first thought that occurred to her was, to throw herself on the fondness of her father, whose indulgence she had ever experienced in the most unlimited degree, and did not doubt but she should find equally on the present occasion. She accordingly flew to him directly, and, pouring out the anguish of her heart before him, implored his protection against her husband's lawless tyranny.

Not

Not to appear prejudiced by any former misrepresentation, he heard her story with the greatest attention; and then, condemning her from her own mouth, flew into a rage a thousand fold severer even than her husband's, upbraiding her with ingratitude to his love, and disobedience to his just authority; and drawing her crime, and the too probable consequences of it in such dreadful lights, that, terrified at the horrid representation, she gave up all thoughts of further opposition, and only besought her father to mediate a peace, on condition of her absolute obedience in every action of her future life.

Such a reconciliation was easily effected; he desired no more, but paid her debt directly: and all things being prepared for their departure as soon as possible, he sent out on his intended exile, taking his whole family with him, in hope that a passion which had given him so much uneasiness would wear off, when the opportunity for gratifying it should be no more.

But, like the wounded hart, she bore the deadly arrow in her side; and, though she complied because she could not help it, the reformation intended by this harsh expedient was far from being probable. The poison had taken too fast hold to be cured by any change of climate, and she languished to return to her own country, only that she might return to her beloved pleasure; while her husband thus sacrificed to a vain hope the flower of a life which his exalted rank and abilities might have made an honour to himself, and an advantage to his country.

CHAP. XV.

Anecdotes of a professed wit. A lucky hit made the most of. Too much of one thing won't do. A rough retort of a coarse jest; with other curious matters of the same kind.

“**Y**OU see (said my guide) the consequence of indulging a passion, till the gratification of it becomes an habit; though there may be but few actually

fatal as this of gaming, the access of any other will be attended by effects far from desirable, and end in ridicule at least, if not in ruin.

“ Observe that man who stands in yonder coffee-house, pumping his brain for pleasantries, and labouring with wit to entertain the sneering croud around him, whose fulsome compliments and ironical applause pass on his vanity for a tribute justly due to his merit. He is one of your professed wits, whose good opinion of themselves make them think every one obliged to admire what they say.

“ He was raised to this eminent station by the success of a ballad he wrote some time ago, of which it may be difficult to determine whether its merit lay in its oddity, its obscurity, or its profaneness. However, the thing took with the public taste in so extraordinary a manner, that the happy author not only got the price of a new edition by the sale of it, but was also admitted to the tables of all those who liked such buffoonery, to entertain them, and their company; where, having an eye to business, he always took the opportunity when they were in high spirits and could refuse nothing, to solicit subscriptions for a collection of *old saws* which he had picked up and strung some how together; by which artifice he contrived to make a good penny of them also.

“ Elevated with this success, he thought he had nothing more to do but publish a *second part of the same*, to make his fortune at once; but, to his great mortification, he found himself mistaken; for the novelty that recommended the former being now worn off, there was little or no notice taken of it: beside, he had exhausted the spirit of obscenity and profaneness so thoroughly in the first part, that there remained nothing for him now but dregs, too coarse for the grossest taste, though he strove to make up for the quality by the quantity, of which he gave the most plentiful measure.

“ Severe as this disappointment was to him in every respect, he affected not to feel it; but, modestly imputing the badness of the public taste, takes the liberty, by way of reprisal, to turn every thing that it approves into ridicule, with a petulence little short of scurrility; and

to support the character of a privileged wit, never affords an opportunity of being impertinent to every person he converses with.

“ Such a conduct cannot always escape reproof from some, and those severe strokes of it, he frequently meets from those who have not a taste for his jokes, or do not think that a pretence to wit gives a privilege for bad manners. An instance or two may not be unentertaining, and may also give you a notion of the dangers which attend such a practice.

“ Talking away the other evening at his usual time in a mixed company, one of his random-shots happened to hit the profession of a gentleman present. As there was nothing in what he said more than common sense, the other, who was a man of years and character, would not have thought it worthy of his notice; had not a hero at the same instant looked him full in the face, and burst out into a loud laugh.

“ As this was fixing the stroke rather too close to be overlooked, the gentleman gravely asked him what he laughed at? as he really could not see the wit of what he said. “ Not see it, sir, (said the other, starting from his seat and going up close to him) then, sir, you may smell it, if your nose is not as dull as your apprehension; and letting a great f——t, raised a louder laugh than before.

“ This was an insult too grossly personal to be borne. The gentleman rose up, and, without saying a word, gave him a kick on the offending part, that drove him to the other side of the room, and then, ringing the bell, coolly ordered the waiter to turn that stinking fellow down stairs. This naturally turned the laugh to the other side. The unfortunate wit had occasion for all his assurance to stand it; and the poor efforts he made to turn it off with a joke, only shewed his impotent vengeance, and made him appear, if possible, still more ridiculous.

“ The proper province of wit is, to discover and point out a relation and resemblance, in some particular circumstances, between ideas obviously inconconnected and unlike; and by that means shew them in a light the novelty and oddity of which may give a pleasing surpris

do this, the mind must be endowed with a power viewing a variety of things in all their shapes and variations at the same instant, and a readiness at catching those fugitive resemblances, and shewing them in various and striking colours.

Thus far reason can trace the origin and effects of acuity, equally misunderstood and misapplied; or, I might rather say, indeed, whose name is usurped by another of the most contrary nature: for instead of this speculative manner of exertion, and the inoffensive and delicate entertainment arising from it, the employment what is at present called wit, is to discover and intimate personal misfortunes and defects, and display them in the grossest lights of ridicule and insult, as the pleasure which it gives arises from the basest and most malignant motive, that of a man's feeling a secret satisfaction on seeing that others are as bad as himself, or perhaps suffer a disgrace which he escapes.

But generally as this pleasure is enjoyed, the authors of it always meet a just return of aversion and contempt for that prostitution of their abilities, by which they afford it. This is not so strange or ingrateful as it may appear. As those who can have a taste for such entertainment are conscious that they themselves are liable to be made the subjects of it to others, they naturally fear and hate the persons who may possibly bring them into so disagreeable a situation.

Thus the moment a man professes himself *a wit*, as it were, declares war with all the rest of the world; as in return every one lies on the watch to pull him down and punish so invidious a presumption. Of this he continually meets the most mortifying instances, to which the means he is obliged to make use of to support his character, lay him constantly and defencelessly open.

Beside this kind of wit, which preys upon particular persons, there is another more malignant in its effects, because more extensive; though motives of the same ungenerous nature with those which recommend the other, make it pass almost uncensured even by the injured objects of it, who are afraid to complain, for fear their seeming

seeming to feel its force should be taken for an acknowledgment of its justice, and so make the injury irreparable. This is turning *professions* into ridicule; by which means individuals are precluded from the fruits of their honest industry, and the community robbed of their contribution towards the general stock: for, however absurd a prejudice raised in that manner may appear to reason, experience shews too many unhappy instances of its influence to admit its being doubted.

“ But though the sufferers do not think proper to complain, they never miss an opportunity of returning an attack they so severely feel; and many a wit has paid dearly for his pleasantry, when he has happened to come into the power of those whom he has so irreconcilably offended. Of this the person before us lately experienced an instance, disagreeable enough to furnish him of this his very favourite practice as long as he lives.

“ Of the many professions which he has wanted to fall upon, the medical art has felt the severest fall of his uncommon turn for ridicule. As he was riding one day to pay a visit to a nobleman, who had desired him to come in that manner, that he might take a view of the extensive and grand improvements about his seat, the heat of the day, and his being unused to that method of travelling, exposed him to some injuries which made his sitting on a saddle very painful to him.

“ While he was in this distress he happened to go to the house of an apothecary on whom he had exerted his unlucky talents with the most injurious success, having fixed his general ridicule of the profession upon him, and a particular description of his person irresistibly ridiculous. Without thinking of this, or dreading any retaliation from a resentment so justly provoked, he called upon him, and, making known his complaint, desired his assistance.

“ The apothecary, whose disposition was equally spiteful and droll, resolved not to miss such an opportunity of taking a signal revenge for all the mortification which the other had brought upon him. Accordingly he desired him to alight for a moment, with all the politeness of his profession, and made him up two plasters, one of which he himself most officiously applied.

part affected, directing him to put on the other when should come off ; and, refusing to take any return for a piece of service which he assured him the pleasure of conferring amply overpaid, wished him an agreeable

The plaister had the desired effect, and he felt no farther pain during the rest of his journey ; at the end of which, finding that the motion of the horse had rubbed it off, he took an opportunity to step aside, just before he went to dinner, and put on the other, as he had been directed. The first application of this was attended with sensations far from pleasing ; however, he thought that must proceed from his being more chafed than before, and concluding that they would soon go off, went directly in to dinner, where, as if fortune had combined with his foe, he was placed between two young ladies, equally sprightly and arch.

He had not been seated long before the plaister began to operate, in a manner that made him sincerely sick of his honourable situation. He was in torture impossible to be supported ; and what added to his distress, he knew not how to get away to remove the cause of it, conscious that the discovery of a trick he was now sufficiently sensible had been played him, would fix a ridicule upon him, which he should never be able to shake off, as he had had too many proofs of the pleasure every body took in every thing that gave him the least vexation or disgrace. This made him resolve to sit it out, inconsiderable as the pain he suffered was.

But he had more plagues to encounter than his utmost forecast could provide against. The ladies between whom he sat soon saw that he was in some uneasiness, and resolved, with the usual good nature of the sex, to aggravate it, for their own entertainment, by every winking trick they could devise. Accordingly, winking each other to act in concert, they drew their chairs closer to him, so as to make it impossible for him to stir, which necessity was now beginning to make him think in spite of all his resolutions, and made the most malicious conjectures at his want of usual mirth and spirit ; to awake which, they pushed him from side to side with

with their elbows, though every time he moved upon his chair pierced him to the soul.

“ The effects of the plaister were by this time become so violent, that nature was no longer able to support them. He fainted away in the midst of the company, and was removed to another room, to undergo a scene of raillery and ridicule, if possible more severe than his pain.

CHAP. XVI.

Instances of the compassion common on such occasions. The practical joker enjoys a double triumph over the wit. Other worse consequences of the prostitution of genius.

“ **T**HE first thing that struck him when he came to himself was the ridiculoufness of his situation. He was laid on his face, across a bed, in the midst of a number of servants, who, in undressing him, had discovered his ailment, some of the consequences of which they were busied in removing with wet cloths, in the same manner as a nurse cleanses an infant. It was some minutes after he recovered his senses before he was able to speak, during which time he had the mortification to hear the unfeeling wretches round him cracking their coarse jests at his misfortune. At length too rough an application to the part affected extorted an involuntary roar, which shewing them that he was come to his senses, they instantly changed their scoffs for a curiosity equally disagreeable, all opening upon him at once to enquire what had thrown him into that condition.

“ It may be thought he had no great inclination to answer their questions. He thanked them for their care and, desiring they would let the chaplain know he wanted to speak to him as soon as he had done dinner, begged to be left alone.

“ His meditations in such a situation could not be very pleasing. He was not at a loss to discover the cause of what had happened; and cursing his own foolish confidence for putting himself any way in the power of one whom he might naturally suppose to be his enemy, resolved

ed to take the severest revenge which the law could
 ure him, for so painful an injury, without making
 allowance for the provocation that had prompted it.
 comforted himself with these thoughts as well as he
 id, till the arrival of the chaplain, whose resentment
 some lashes of wit made him in no haste to come,
 not the curiosity of the rest of the company, which
 raised by the representation of the servants, acce-
 ed his motion.

As soon as he entered the chamber, the poor suf-
 ferer, whose pain was far from being entirely removed,
 aimed in the anguish of his heart, "O my friend, I
 sent for you to implore your assistance to inflict a
 mer punishment upon the villain who has brought
 to this disgrace and torture."—He then recounted
 the affair of the plaister, as I have related it to you ;
 concluded with conjuring the chaplain to use his
 influence with his lordship, to do him justice for an out-
 rage, which, according to the laws of hospitality, af-
 fected himself, as it was offered to his guest.

His reverence sat picking his teeth in the greatest
 obscurity while he was telling his tale ; at the end of
 it, "Pray, sir, (said he, with an air of the most in-
 difference) what would you have me do?"—
 "Pray, sir! (answered the wit, provoked beyond his pati-
 ence at the other's behaviour) chew the cud of your last
 insult, till you are so happy as to get another, that you
 may not lose a moment's enjoyment of that pleasure
 which seems to be the sole end of your existence."—

Stung by the severity of this reproach, the chap-
 lain directly left him without making any reply ; and re-
 turning to the company told them, that the violence of
 the pain had disordered the poor man's head, and made
 him stark mad. Such a representation afforded matter
 for many curious remarks, in which the affinity between
 madness and madness was most learnedly discussed, while they
 were finishing their wine, without ever thinking of pro-
 ceeding to the subject of their speculation any relief.

At length, curiosity prompted his lordship to see so
 strange a sight, in hope of confirming, by his behaviour,
 the nice observations he had been making on the na-
 ture

ture of madness, evident symptoms of which he declared he had perceived the moment he saw him that morning ; but he was disagreeably disappointed to find the chaplain's account without foundation, and the man in his senses ; so that he was deprived of the merit of his judicious discovery, on which he had plumed himself not a little, and his theory was left unsupported by the proof he had appealed to. However, he concealed his chagrin, and, enquiring into the particulars of so extraordinary an affair, (for the chaplain's account was far from being satisfactory) revenged himself for his disappointment by laughing in the most mortifying manner at every ridiculous circumstance ; a behaviour that aggravated the other's distress, as he was restrained, by respect, from making any reply.

“ When they had sufficiently enjoyed the scene, one of the company more compassionate than the rest, but who thought himself that it might not be improper to do something for the relief of the poor sufferer, whose appearance shewed that his pain was not much abated. Accordingly, upon consultation, it was agreed to be the best way to send for the apothecary who had made the plaister, as he must necessarily know what was proper to remove its effects better than any one else. The distressed patient would gladly have avoided such an interview, if only to disappoint his enemy of the pleasure of triumphing in the success of his trick : but perhaps for that very reason his lordship insisted on it, and he was sent for directly.

“ This exceeded the apothecary's hopes. He obeyed the summons with the greatest pleasure ; and on his arrival, having first prudently expressed his surprize, and asserted his innocence of any evil intention in what he had done, was shewed up to his patient, who no sooner fixed his eyes upon him, than bursting into the most violent rage, “ Villain ! (said he) what base trick is this you have played me ? But be assured that I will have the most exemplary satisfaction ! I'll make you know.”—

“ Sir, (answered the apothecary, with a sly grin) have a little patience, and all will soon be well. I

that an innocent joke should give you such offence."—

A joke, wretch! Do you call putting me to such pure and disgrace a joke?"—

Nothing more, I assure you, sir; and if you will let me leave to apply this liniment to the place where your complaint is, I'll engage to remove it in a few minutes; and as for the disgrace, there is nothing in it; only matter for a few days laughter, and it will then be no more thought of."—

No more thought of! Yes, it will be always thought of, and I shall never be able to shew my face again without the ridiculous figure I have made by your cursed jests; but I forgive you, may I be the laughing-stock of every fool I meet."—

Surely, sir, a man of your reason and benevolence cannot harbour such an implacable resentment! What would you do if you were in my case? Unprovoked by the least offence, you wantonly fell on my uncouth figure, on the profession by which I earn bread for myself and my family, till you have made both so ridiculous, that children hoot at me as I go along the streets, and equally wise parents slight my skill, and pass by my shop with contempt. The blister on your posteriors will soon be healed; nor can the disgrace you seem to take so heavily to heart, be attended with any consequences worse than a laugh, which you are well able to turn from yourself to some body else; but with me the matter is quite different; my very subsistence is attacked, the happiness of my family sacrificed, merely for a malicious jest, and to shew your powers of ridicule."—

Struck with the justice of this reproof, the Wit had no power to make any reply, but submitted in silence to the other's assistance, who, satisfied with this complete triumph, soon put an end to his pain by a proper application. When this relief had restored him to his spirits, he took the apothecary by the hand, seizing it eagerly, "Dear doctor, (said he) I acknowledge that I have been to blame, much to blame; but I never considered this matter in a proper light before. What I can do now, is to make you any reparation in

OL. I.

K

my

my power, and to promise that I will never be guilty of the like indiscretion again. Never will I indulge any more at the expence of giving pain to an honest heart." —

" This resolution lasted while he was under the apothecary's hands ; but no sooner was he recovered than he relapsed into his old humour, which he even indulged with greater latitude and virulence than ever, that he should not appear to have been dispirited by what he had suffered. As to the other, his trick was attended with success beyond his most sanguine hopes. Beside the present pleasure of revenge, the moment this story took wind, the ridicule which had been so prejudicial to him recoiled with tenfold force upon his adversary, and he recovered his former credit and respect.

" But this personal licentiousness, though perhaps the most immediately painful to particulars, is not the worst instance in which this person abuses the talents nature has bestowed upon him with more than common liberality. You see the levity of his looks and behaviour ; the same folly infects his writings to the most extravagant excess. In these he is dissipation itself. Straying from one subject to another, he jumbles all together the lightest and most serious, so as to make them appear equally ridiculous, sacrificing every thing to raise a laugh, as if that were the sole end of genius, the object of erudition.

" Nor is this all ; there are some things over which nature herself commands to throw a veil. To lift up therefore, and make them the subject of wit and pleasantry, even in the almost boundless liberty of conversation, is a great offence ; but in writing it is absolutely unpardonable, as that perpetuates the evil, and lays the foundation for debauching generations yet unborn. This is the grossest prostitution of powers given for a better purpose, and is always brought to a severe account."

C H A P. XXII.

old observation confirmed by a new character. A remarkable instance of the inconsistency of the human heart. A curious love scene. proves that the pleasure of variety is sometimes attended with danger and inconvenience.

BUT, as I have remarked on other occasions, it is the proper application that effectuates the blessing. Without this the best gifts of heaven become curse, and only aggravate the evils they were bestowed to prevent.

“Observe that person who struts about yonder in a military habit, pleased with the ensigns of his profession, like a child with a new bauble. Every favour, by which fortune could seem to secure human happiness, had sheaped upon his head in the most unbounded manner; but this very profusion produced the contrary effect: he is miserable in imagination, for want of something to wish for, he has renounced such an insipid plenty, and plunged himself, for variety, into the real miseries of a wretched life, which is permitted only as a punishment on the follies and vices of mankind.

“It has been observed, that from a close attention to the first essays of the opening mind, a presage may be formed of the future life. The distinguishing characters of his youth were a sated indifference to every thing in his possession; an inconstancy even more than childish in all his pursuits, he seldom persisting in any to the attainment of its object. As the affluence of his fortune made any particular application not absolutely necessary to him, this fluctuating imbecility of indisposition passed unnoticed, and his inattention to every prudential regard in all his actions was extolled as generosity and magnificence of spirit. But the event has proved the error of this judgment, the same weakness having ruled the conduct of his riper years, and made him an easy prey to every idle passion of his own, to every mean design of his more indigent companions. To recapitulate every instance of this would be to make an history of his whole life. It will be sufficient just to touch upon one or two

to support the character I have here drawn, and as they so strongly illustrate the inconsistency of the human heart.

“ On his arriving at that period of life, when men are concluded to be capable of conducting themselves, the first thing which the care of his friends suggested to secure his happiness (for their eyes at length began to be opened to the dangers attending such a disposition) was to find out a female, whose prudence might be a shield to his levity, and prevent its worst effects; and whom reason and inclination should go hand in hand, in recommending to his choice as a partner for his life. In this delicate and important search they were not long undetermined. They fixed upon one to whom envy herself could make no possible objection. Born in an exalted rank, and rich in every favourite gift of heaven, she seemed designed to crown the blessings of an happy life. The moment she was mentioned to him he received the hint with rapture. In the intercourse of a general acquaintance his heart had not been insensible of her charms, and on the nearer attention of such a design, he soon perceived the more valuable beauties of her mind. By the assistance of his friends, he preserved his resolution so long as to make his addresses acceptable, and received, in her hand, a seal of the most perfect felicity which this life is capable of enjoying.

“ But scarce was he in possession of this just object of every rational desire, when the natural inconstancy of his temper prevailed, and he slighted an happiness for which all others sighed, only because it was in his possession. Accordingly he soon relapsed into all the licentiousness of his former life, and vainly sought in loose variety for that pleasure, which his perverse insensibility prevented his enjoying at home.

“ Such pleasure is always purchased with vexation and pain. As he was prowling about one evening for his usual game in the galleries of the theatre, he happened to see a female whose appearance had something in it more than commonly pleasing to him. He immediately addressed her in the familiarity of such places, and was not less struck with the sprightliness of her conversation than he had been before with her beauty. Encouraged by her freedom, and confiding in the su-

periority

priority of his rank, at the end of the play he hesitated not to propose retiring to one of the neighbouring taverns, to improve so agreeable an acquaintance. This he positively refused, though in terms which implied no any resentment at the proposal, nor prevented his telling her at least to give him another meeting at the play-house, which she at length consented to do.

"In two or three interviews of this kind, which she herself be persuaded to indulge him with, she played her part with such address, that she gained an absolute conquest over him, removing, by her well-acted modesty, every suspicion of her real character. At length, when she had brought her blushing to confess a return of his passion, and silenced every other scruple, she started the great difficulty, of the danger of being detected by her husband, as she unhappily was a married woman. This discovery was far from being agreeable to him. He loved his pleasures; but he was far from desiring to have them enhanced by any appearance of danger. However, he had gone too far to retreat now; and therefore, putting the best face upon the affair, he prevailed upon her to run the hazard of this discovery, by promising to protect her against her husband's resentment, should any such thing happen, and to make a provision for her that should save her from any disagreeable consequences of it.

"His ability to perform such a promise, which she was no stranger to, and the persuasive argument of several very valuable presents, in the end prevailed upon her. Accordingly one evening, when her husband was engaged abroad, she let him in at the back-door of her house, with the greatest appearance of privacy and fear, and conducted him softly up to her own chamber. He had not been many minutes in possession of his desires, when all on a sudden the door was burst in, and a drawn sword was held to his breast, by a man who appeared to be in the most violent agitation of frantic rage.

"Villain! adulterers! (exclaimed he, foaming at the mouth, and rolling his eyes wildly around) have I then caught you at last? — This instant shall your adulterous blood pay the price of my dishonour! — this instant will I" —

"O mercy!

"O mercy! mercy! (cried the trembling female holding up her hands, and tuning her voice in the most plaintive tone) Spare us! — spare us but a moment! — Murder not our wretched souls as well as our bodies."

"The husband started at these words, and seemed lost in thought, while his lifted arm hung over them in the air. She saw the critical moment, and jogging her lover, who lay petrified with fear, "Speak to him (said she) perhaps your words may have effect! his heart was ever tender and humane."——

"Roused by this address, the poor self-convicted culprit attempted to assuage him with the best arguments his fear could suggest. "Think not of revenge (said he) which must prove as fatal to yourself as to us; but name any reparation you please to require, and it shall be instantly made. My fortune is sufficient".

"Reparation? — No. — Nothing but blood can make me reparation, (answered the husband, rising to tenfold rage after the pause) my honour, my love for that ungrateful woman will hear of no other reparation — As to myself, my life I value not a pin's fee; all that is dear to me is now lost."—— Then sinking, as it were into softness, "And can I wound that breast fairer than monumental alabaster? O woman! woman!"——

"At these words he held his hand to his eyes, to hide his tears, and sobbed aloud as in the anguish of his soul. The lovers thought this fit of softness favourable to their fears, and, slipping out of bed, naked as they were, threw themselves at his feet, and besought his mercy in the most moving terms. After suffering a conflict of some moments, he sunk backwards into a chair, and, bidding them put on their cloaths, sat deliberating how to act in such a distressing situation.

"In the mean time the lover, who thought that his life depended on the result of this deliberation, renewed his offers of reparation with the greatest earnestness while his partner in guilt applied for mercy, with every argument that could move compassion. His tender heart was not proof to such a double attack. After pausing for some little time, "And what reparation can you make (said he) for robbing me of the love of a woman, to obtain whom I have sacrificed my whole fortune

fortune, and plunged myself into debts, which have driven me to the brink of despair? but I thought nothing too much to suffer for her, base and ungrateful as she is" —

"I will not only instantly enable you to discharge those debts (answered the lover eagerly, catching a glimpse of hope from that capitulating question) but I will also settle such an annuity on you for life, as shall raise you above the necessity of ever contracting any more." —

"What shall I do? (exclaimed the husband, as in agony) shall I compound my dishonour for a price? shall I perish in want and despair? — What shall I, can I do?"

"The irresolution implied in these words, gave the terrified lovers new hope. They assailed him again with every argument they could devise, which they pursued with such success, that at length he submitted to receive a reparation for an injury not to be recalled. When this first point was gained the terms were soon settled, the eagerness of the lover preventing the other's making any demand, by the largeness of his offers. A lawyer, who was a friend of the husband, and luckily happened to be in a neighbouring coffee-house, was directly called in, and soon confirmed the compact beyond a possibility of revocation; one article of which was, that the lover should make a separate provision for his mistress, the husband's delicate sense of honour not permitting him to have any farther intercourse with her.

CHAP. XXIII.

A new motive for turning soldier; with a short view of the military profession. The scene is changed, and a more extensive prospect opened.

EVERY circumstance of this transaction bore such glaring marks of imposition, that any other person would have seen through, and avoided the deceit; or at least when that was too late, have shewn proper resentment of it, by dropping all farther commerce

merce with the base woman who drew him into such a snare, and was evidently an accomplice in the whole. But, blind to all conviction, he grew fonder of her than before, and, seeming to have changed his very nature, proved constant to her longer than he had ever been to any other object; tho' far from striving to retain him by any appearance of regard, any obsequiousness in her behaviour, now that her independence, the first object of her designs, was established, she affected on all occasions to treat him with the most insolent contempt, and openly bestowed upon others those favours which had cost him so dear.

"While he indulged every vicious passion in this profligate manner, the condition of his deserted wife deserved the highest compassion. Sensible of the danger of expostulating on so delicate a subject, she seemed not to see the slights which he hourly shewed her, but, drying up her tears whenever he approached her, always met him with a smile of tenderness and respect. Smothered grief preys with double violence upon the heart. Though she did not complain, she could not avoid feeling the pain of such treatment under which she pined insensibly away, like a flower cankered at the roots.

"But that which reason could not do, was effected by the natural inconstancy of his temper, and a new whim supplanted his profligate mistress in his thoughts. His country happened to be engaged in war; the noise of drums and trumpets turned his head, and he must needs be a soldier, for want of something else to give him employment. As soon as this caprice took possession of him, he bought a commission in the army directly, and set about learning the military trade with as much eagerness as if he was obliged to follow it for bread; and, to shew his proficiency in tactics, even went so far as to write an elaborate *treatise* on the mighty advantages of a soldier's *turning out his toes* in his marching.

"When he had with infinite pains got his companion trimmed and disciplined to his mind, contrary to the expectation of all who knew him, he pursued the humour so far as to go with them into the field, where they soon had an opportunity of signalizing their valour.

the expence of near half their lives. But an unlucky visit of compliment to the colonel deprived him the glory of sharing in the danger of that day, though the gallant behaviour of his men reflected sufficient honour on him, for having trained to such excellent discipline, and inspired them with so noble a contempt of death. Encouraged by that success, he persists in his pursuit of fame, the vicissitudes of the military life keeping his mind continually employed, and saving him from the fatigue of a moment's reflection; an evil to avoid which he has ever had recourse to some new scheme of active idleness."

"I thought it impossible, (said I) O my guide, that the heart of man could be so absurdly perverse! The general motives for embracing the military life are necessity, an enthusiastic passion for fame, and perhaps, in a very few instances, a disinterested spirit of patriotism. But here none of these can be alledged; for the colonel's temper is too indifferent; too listless and unsteady for the pursuit of fame; and his affluence raises him above necessity, which is the most universal of all: that he literally sacrifices the most solid advantages of life for nothing, and runs into danger and distress, because he is incapable of enjoying the opposite blessings."

"To the motives which you have assigned (returning the spirit) you might have added avarice and ambition, from both of which he is also constitutionally exempt. As to the dangers and distresses in which you imagine he must have involved himself, though sufficient to deter any man of reason from plunging wantonly into them; in such cases as his, they are far short of what inexperienced apprehension may represent. The brave sentinel who hourly exposes his life for a morsel of bread to support it, and the subaltern officer who leads that soldier to fight, struggle with difficulties, and counter dangers, which nature shudders at the thought of, but ascend to the higher ranks, and a great part of the terrors vanish. Their carriages save them from the dangers of the field, their tables are heaped with delicacies, and luxuries reign in their tents. The day of battle, in which
alone

alone they are exposed to danger, is in some measure day of rest to the others ; the motions and manœuvres in which the modern art of war mostly consists, harassing the unhappy soldier with greater hardships, and exposing him to more dangers than any general engagement. But of this you will be a better judge when you have taken a view of yonder scene of war. We have dwelt too long upon the minute concerns of private life of individuals, however strongly marked out for observation, by titles, wealth, or folly. We will now enlarge our view, and see whether the conduct of nations is more rational ; whether the clouds of folly and vice which overcast the cottage, and produce domestic unhappiness in lower life, may not, when raised into the higher regions, burst into storms and thunder, and make an universal wreck of all the works of nature.

The END of the FIRST VOLUME.